

# ISRAEL'S WARS

A History Since 1947

**AHRON BREGMAN**

**Also available as a printed book  
see title verso for ISBN details**

# Israel's Wars

# WARFARE AND HISTORY

GENERAL EDITOR: JEREMY BLACK, PROFESSOR OF HISTORY,  
UNIVERSITY OF EXETER

*Air Power in the Age of Total War*

John Buckley

*The Armies of the Caliphs: Military and Society in the Early Islamic State*

Hugh Kennedy

*The Balkan Wars, 1912–1913: Prelude to the First World War*

Richard C. Hall

*English Warfare, 1511–1642*

Mark Charles Fissel

*European and Native American Warfare, 1675–1815*

Armstrong Starkey

*European Warfare, 1660–1815*

Jeremy Black

*The First Punic War*

J. F. Lazenby

*Frontiersmen: Warfare in Africa Since 1950*

Anthony Clayton

*German Armies: War and German Politics, 1648–1806*

Peter H. Wilson

*The Great War 1914–1918*

Spencer C. Tucker

*Israel's Wars, 1947–1993*

Ahron Bregman

*The Korean War: no Victors, no Vanquished*

Stanley Sandler

*Medieval Chinese Warfare, 300–900*

David A. Graff

*Medieval Naval Warfare, 1000–1500*

Susan Rose

*Modern Chinese Warfare, 1795–1989*

Bruce A. Elleman

*Modern Insurgencies and Counter-insurgencies: Guerrillas and their Opponents since 1750*

Ian F. W. Beckett

*Naval Warfare, 1815–1914*

Lawrence Sondhaus

*Ottoman Warfare, 1500–1700*

Rhoads Murphey

*Seapower and Naval Warfare, 1650–1830*

Richard Harding

*The Soviet Military Experience*

Roger R. Reese

*Vietnam*

Spencer C. Tucker

*The War for Independence and the Transformation of American Society*

Harry M. Ward

*War and the State in Early Modern Europe: Spain, the Dutch Republic and Sweden as Fiscal-military States, 1500–1660*

Jan Glete

*Warfare and Society in Europe, 1792–1914*

Geoffrey Wawro

*Warfare at Sea, 1500–1650*

Jan Glete

*Warfare in Atlantic Africa, 1500–1800: Maritime Conflicts and the Transformation of Europe*

John K. Thornton

*Warfare, State and Society in the Byzantine World, 565–1204*

John Haldon

*War in the Early Modern World, 1450–1815*

Jeremy Black

*Wars of Imperial Conquest in Africa, 1830–1914*

Bruce Vandervort

*Western Warfare in the Age of the Crusades, 1000–1300*

John France

*The Irish and British Wars, 1637–1654. Triumph, Tragedy, and Failure*

James Scott Wheeler



Ahron  
**Bregman**

## Israel's Wars

A history since 1947

Second Edition



London and New York

First published 2000  
by Routledge  
11 New Fetter Lane, London EC4P 4EE

Simultaneously published in the USA and Canada  
by Routledge  
29 West 35th Street, New York, NY 10001

Second edition first published 2002

*Routledge is an imprint of the Taylor & Francis Group*

This edition published in the Taylor & Francis e-Library, 2004.

© 2000, 2002 Ahron Bregman

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reprinted or reproduced or utilised in any form or by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publishers.

*British Library Cataloguing in Publication Data*

A catalogue record for this book is available from the British Library

*Library of Congress Cataloging in Publication Data*

A catalog record for this book has been requested

ISBN 0-203-36180-6 Master e-book ISBN

ISBN 0-203-37438-X (Adobe eReader Format)

ISBN 0-415-28715-4 (Hbk)

ISBN 0-415-28716-2 (Pbk)

For  
Asher & Shoshana  
Frensdorff





## CONTENTS

List of illustrations	x
Preface to the 2002 Edition	xii
Preface	xiv
1 The 1947–9 war	1
2 A nation-in-arms 1949–67	39
3 The six bad years 1967–73	62
4 War and peace 1973–9	102
5 War in Lebanon 1982	145
6 <i>Intifada</i> 1987–93	179
7 The <i>Al-Aqsa Intifada</i> 2000–	204
8 Conclusions	238
Notes	244
Select bibliography	254
Index	261

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

### MAPS

1	Palestine 1947: the UN Partition Plan	13
2	Israel 1949: armistice lines	34
3	The 1967 Six Day War: Israel's conquests	94
4	The 1973 Yom Kippur War: the Syrian front	136
5	The 1973 Yom Kippur War: the Egyptian front	140
6	Lebanon, 'Operation Peace for Galilee' 6–11 June 1982	167
7	The Al-Aqsa Compound	206
8	The Gaza Strip	211

### PLATES (Between pp. 126 and 127)

1	Palestinians flee from Palestine during the 1948 War.
2	Israeli Mystere jet flying overhead during the attack on the USS Liberty, 8 June 1967.

- 3 Israeli soldiers at the Western Wall, East Jerusalem, June 1967.
- 4 Golda Meir, Prime Minister of Israel from 1969 to 1974, with Defence Minister Moshe Dayan.
- 5 Egyptian troops plant their flag on the Bar-Lev line.
- 6 Egyptian President Anwar el-Sadat, American President Jimmy Carter and Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin shake hands at the signing of the Camp David Accords, 26 March 1979.
- 7 Defence Minister Ariel Sharon pointing at a map with General Amos Yaron, commander of the Beirut area during the 1982 Lebanon war.
- 8 Palestinians at a burning barricade prepare to fire stones towards Israeli soldiers stationed in several jeeps during a violent clash on the outskirts of the West Bank town of Ramallah, 2000.

## PREFACE TO THE 2002 EDITION

When I wrote *Israel's Wars*, in the late 1990s, my idea was to produce a relatively short volume which would provide a summary and evaluation of some five decades of Israeli-Arab wars. At that time – the post-Oslo era – my mood, like that of many others, was euphoric. I saw in Yitzhak Rabin's handshakes, first with Yasser Arafat in 1993 and then with King Hussein of Jordan in 1994 historic events so powerful that they should, so I believed, in their symbolism alone, have put an end to the Arab-Israeli conflict. 'Never', I remember myself saying with much conviction in a lecture, 'will anyone be able to turn this wheel back'. I was wrong – like many others – for the wheel has been indeed turned back and as this edition goes to print, the most famous land in history is yet again engulfed in flames, with Israelis and Palestinians fighting each other in a war of planes and tanks, sniper shooting and ambushes, suicide bombings and assassinations. The patterns of this cruel war, the so-called *Al-Aqsa Intifada*, have been shaped during its first year and although it is still in progress the picture is clear enough for us to chronicle the

main turning points of this confrontation and analyse its nature. This has been done in the new chapter – The *Al-Aqsa Intifada* – which is the main addition to this 2002 edition.

This revised edition also contains other new – never before published – material which sheds new light on one of the most mysterious episodes in Israel's war history – the *Liberty* Affair. *USS Liberty* was an American spy ship which was dispatched by Washington during the June 1967 war to monitor events in the Middle East. On 8 June, the fourth day of this war, Israel bombed *Liberty*, killing 34 men and wounding 171. The attack has been a matter of controversy ever since and over the years there have been speculations on whether the Israeli attack was premeditated – planned and deliberate – aimed at preventing *Liberty* from following up events, particularly that Israel was massing forces in Galilee in order to seize the Golan Heights, or whether it was – as the Israelis have always claimed – a 'tragic case of misidentification'.

A short but significant recording of a conversation over the radio link between Israeli pilots and the Air Force headquarters during the attack on *Liberty*, published here for the first time, shows beyond doubt, that the Israelis did know, even in the initial stages of their strike on *Liberty*, that this was an American vessel. Nevertheless, and in spite of the positive identification of the ship as American they continued with naval attacks until they put *Liberty* out of action.

This revised edition of *Israel's Wars* has been aimed particularly at the general reader and consequently much of the scholarly apparatus has been removed. For details of the archival and other sources on which the book is based readers are invited to consult the original 2000 edition.

Ahron Bregman  
London, 2001

## PREFACE

This book is the result of a suggestion made by Jeremy Black, general editor of *Warfare and History*, who thought that an account of Israel's wars would be a useful addition to the series. Its publication was delayed by an invitation to act as a consultant and write the companion book for a six-part BBC Television documentary about the Arab–Israeli conflict (*The Fifty Years War: Israel and the Arabs*). This has proved a benefit since, in the course of my work on the series, I came across material which I could never otherwise have obtained.

*Israel's Wars* is, first and foremost, an overview of Israel's wars with the Palestinians and Arabs. I start with the 1947–8 Jewish–Palestinian struggle for possession and mastery of the land of Palestine, and conclude with the Israeli–Palestinian confrontation which took place between 1987 and 1993, the so-called *Intifada* and its sequel – the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* of 2000. In between I examine Israel's wars with its Arab neighbours, principally Egypt, Jordan, Syria and the PLO in Lebanon, in the years 1948, 1956, 1967, 1968–70, 1973 and 1982.

Israel's Wars is not, however, only about battles and fighting, but also about the people of Israel, a nation-in-arms, who are, it is often said, 'soldiers on eleven months' annual leave'. By looking at more than five decades of Israeli–Palestinian–Arab conflict we can see that the Israelis, in spite of tremendous difficulties, have for many years demonstrated an extraordinary willingness to carry the burden, pay high taxes, endure long military service, and fight both in wars and between them. But after, and as a result of, the Six Day War of June 1967, as I will demonstrate, Israelis became more critical of their leadership, dissent grew, and there was also a pronounced tendency to reject the idea that preparations for war need always be at the expense of social services and justify indifference towards domestic problems. Still, in spite of growing dissent and criticism, the Israelis remained, in the post-1967 war period, loyal to their leadership, always rallying behind it in times of war. The turning point, however, came during the 1982 war in Lebanon when, for the first time in Israel's history, national solidarity showed signs of breaking down, and while the battle was still in progress Israelis protested against the war, and some even declared their refusal to take part in it. This unprecedented challenge and decline in the motivation of Israelis to serve gathered pace after the Lebanon war and reached a peak during the *Intifada*, the Palestinian revolt in the occupied territories between 1987 and 1993, and then as of 2000.

I link this trend mainly to a reduction in the level of the external threat to Israel's existence, and suggest that during the first two or three decades of the state, a strong sense of external threat, fresh memories of the Holocaust and collective ideals and priorities had stiffened the will of Israelis to serve, fight and sacrifice. This determination was strengthened by the leadership's success in cultivating the image of Israel as a small defenceless state surrounded by evil Arabs bent on her destruction; and, ironically, by the Arabs themselves, who played into



their hands by exaggerating their own military capability and talking of dismantling the Jewish state, wiping it out and driving the Jews into the sea. However, with the external danger subsiding, the gradual disappearance of the Holocaust generation and a general shift from collective ideals and priorities to individual ones, there was also a decline of will among Israelis to serve and bear the burden, as was made very clear in Lebanon in 1982 and during the *Intifada*.

This book on Israel's wars is designed to be rather more than a chronicle of events. There are frequent pauses to examine how things operate and for what reasons; and I often go beyond the task of narrative and description to comment and explain, so that the reader can elicit from the sequence of events some better understanding of how things turned out as they did.

The book also contains new – never before published – material. Perhaps most notable is the revelation that Anwar Sadat's right-hand man (who also worked for Sadat's predecessor President Nasser as confidante and member of his presidential staff) was an agent of Mossad, Israel's secret service. I expose, for the first time, the documents he passed to the Israelis which became the foundation of Israel's strategy before the Yom Kippur War ('The Conception') and claim that from being an agent working exclusively for Mossad, he later became a double agent and worked also for Sadat, who sent him, on the eve of the Yom Kippur War, to meet the head of Mossad in London and to mislead him regarding the time Egypt would open fire.

I have always believed that while one can learn history from documents, articles and books, it can be better understood if heard from those who have made it, for motives and personalities are important in the making of history. And though a person's recollection tends to be clouded by later events, oral history is still an important complement to the written word; a personal context sometimes sheds light on political decision-making better than the most detailed of documents. In the last

decade or so, in addition to sieving through piles of written material, I have had the opportunity to meet many who have taken part in making the history about which I am writing here. Their names are too numerous to mention, but I should like to thank in particular the following, from whom I have benefited most: Meir Amit, Moshe Arens, Ehud Barak, Haim Bar Lev, Mordechai Bar On, Benyamin Begin, Yossi Beilin, Yossi Ben Aharon, Avigdor Ben Gal, Benyamin Ben Eliezer, Yosef Burg, Warren Christopher, Ben Zion Cohen, Avraham Dar, Robert Dassa, Uzi Dayan, Abba Eban, Rafael Eitan, Miriam Eshkol, Yeshayahu Gavish, Mordechai Gazit, Eli Geva, Benjamin Givli, Mordechai Gur, Eitan Haber, Yehoshafat Harkabi, Isser Harel, Yair Hirschfeld, Mordechai Hod, Yitzhak Hofi, Yehiel Kadishai, Lou Keddar, David Kimche, Tarje Rød Larsen, Yitzhak Levi-Levitza, Amram Mitzna, Uzi Narkiss, Yitzhak Navon, Benjamin Netanyahu, Marcelle Ninio, Meir Pail, Dan Pattir, Matityahu Peled, Shimon Peres, Leah Rabin, Yitzhak Rabin, Itamar Rabinovich, Gideon Rafael, Ran Ronen (Peker), Elyakim Rubinstein, Yehoshua Saguey, Yossi Sarid, Uri Savir, Amnon Lipkin-Shahak, Shlomo Shamir, Yitzhak Shamir, Yaacov Sharett, Ariel Sharon, Yisrael Tal, Avraham Tamir, Yair Tzaban, Ezer Weizman, Aharon Yariv, Dani Yatom, Re'havam Ze'evi, and Eli Zeira. Last, but certainly not least, my love and thanks go to Dana, and to my children Daniel and Maya, whose constant interruption is a good reminder that there is more to life than the long and lonesome business of writing.

Ahron Bregman  
London, 1999



# 1

---

## THE 1947–9 WAR

### A CONFLICT IS BORN

‘Some years’, J. K. Galbraith once wrote, ‘like some poets and politicians and some lovely women, are singled out for fame far beyond the common lot’.<sup>1</sup> For the Middle East in general, and for the people of Palestine in particular, 1948 was clearly such a year. It was the year in which the British Mandate for Palestine terminated, a Jewish state called Israel was established, thousands of Arab Palestinians became refugees, and regular armed forces of Transjordan, Egypt, Syria and other Arab countries entered Palestine-Israel and clashed with Israeli forces. Thus began the first all-out Arab–Israeli war which – like the civil war which preceded it – revolved around land.

The ancient land of Palestine – small in size, covering some 10,000 square miles – formed a narrow strip stretching along the Levant. In the south it was separated from Egypt by the dunes of the Sinai desert, in the east it was bordered by the Syrian Arabian desert, and in the north it was marked by the city of Dan. Although described in the Bible as ‘a land of milk and

honey', Palestine was in fact a barren, rocky, neglected and inhospitable land with malaria-infested swamps. Nevertheless its strategic importance was immense, for it provided a bridge from Asia to Africa – a junction for traffic crossing from the south (Egypt) to the north (the highlands of Hittite Anatolia), to the east (Mesopotamian Anatolia) and to the west (Cyprus). Because of its strategic importance Palestine had been, throughout its history, the battleground for military campaigns and invasions by the pharaohs, the kings of Assyria, Babylon and Persia, Alexander the Great, the emperors of Byzantium, the Arabs, the Crusaders, the Mamelukes and the Turks. Finally, British forces during the First World War had taken it from the Turks, who had ruled this land ever since Sultan Selim I occupied it in 1517.

It was under the British rule, which lasted from 1917 to 1948, that the struggle between Jew and Arab for the mastery and possession of the land of Palestine reached an unprecedented peak. A *modus vivendi* between the two peoples in Palestine had been always hard to achieve, because here was a clash of rights – the claim of two races to one land – and thus any solution could be found only on the lines of least injustice. In their struggle to win the argument and the land, the Jews claimed that the rocky land of Palestine which they called *Eretz Yisrael* was their traditional and spiritual home, one promised by God to Abraham and 'to [his] posterity'. But the Arabs of Palestine also regarded Palestine as their rightful home, for 'posterity', as they saw it, also included themselves, since they were the descendants of Ishmael, Abraham's son by his concubine Ketirah. But it was more than a conflict between two rights, for the Jews felt that *Eretz Yisrael* was their only safe haven after years of persecutions and endless pogroms in their native countries. The Arabs of Palestine, on the other hand, resented the idea that they, the majority of whom were Muslims with no tradition of anti-Semitism, had to pay the price for evils committed against the Jews by others, often within European Christendom. They

also argued that in contrast with the Jews, who had been moving in and out of Palestine and had always been the minority in this land, they – the Arabs – had never abandoned the land, and had for hundreds of years constituted the majority of its population. This was true, but as the years passed and Jews continued to arrive in Palestine, the demographic scales tilted steadily in their favour. There were Jews who had come to Palestine to die and be buried in the Holy Land, others who had immigrated to Palestine to escape persecution, and there were also Zionists who had immigrated to Palestine in order to build a new Hebrew society which they wished would be, as Dr Chaim Weizmann, a Zionist and chemist at Manchester University, put it, ‘as Jewish as England is English or America is American’.

Scrutinizing the speeches and writings of Zionist leaders of the late nineteenth century and the beginning of the twentieth, one comes to the inevitable conclusion that some of the Zionist leaders did truly believe that Palestine was derelict and empty – ‘A land without a people waiting for a people without a land’ as the Anglo-Jewish writer Yisrael Zwingwill put it. This, it is worth noting, was not an unusual thought, for some early Zionists suffered from the common Eurocentric illusion that territories outside Europe were in a state of political vacuum. But there were also Zionists who did realize that an Arab community existed in Palestine – that people married, brought up children, quarrelled, loved and died – however, they took it for granted that the native Arabs would welcome the new arrivals, whose zeal and skill and, of course, money would help develop the barren land for the benefit of all of its inhabitants. Theodor Herzl, a Budapest-born Viennese journalist and the father of modern Jewish nationalism (Zionism), who in 1896 had published an eighty-six-page book called *The Jewish State*, knew, as emerges from his writings, that Palestine was not an empty land. But he thought that the Jews could buy the land from Arab landlords and spirit the ‘penniless [Arab] population [living on this land]

. . . across the border by procuring employment for [the Arab population] . . . while denying [them] any employment in our country'.<sup>2</sup> It is easy with hindsight to criticize this way of thinking, but we should bear in mind that such thinking was not unusual in the age of colonialism, when the rights of indigenous inhabitants were often ignored.

Persecuted, and often encouraged by their leaders to leave their native countries, Jews began pouring into Palestine. From 1882 to 1903, some 20,000–30,000 Jews arrived to join the small Jewish community, mostly religious, living especially in Tiberias, Jerusalem and Safed; and in the short period between 1904 and the beginning of the First World War another 35,000 Jews were added. It is estimated that in 1917 about 85,000 Jews lived in Palestine alongside 600,000 Arabs. Jewish immigration to Palestine was relatively restricted under Ottoman rule because the authorities suspected that the Jews were being used as cat's-paw by the West, but with the defeat of the Turks during the First World War, Jewish immigration to Palestine increased. From the end of the war to 1923 another 35,000 Jews came mainly from Russia, and in the second half of the 1920s the flow of Jews increased, with 82,000 arriving between 1925 and 1930. Troubles in Europe, notably the rise of Nazism in Germany, meant that immigration to Palestine gathered momentum, with 200,000 arrivals between 1932 and 1938. Here it is worth remarking that many of these Jewish immigrants would have preferred to go elsewhere, especially to America, one of the most sought-after destinations for immigrants, but the gates to America were half-shut. Among other reasons, this was because the leaders of the Zionist movement exerted all the influence they could muster to make sure that the US did not open up immigration to these Jews for the simple reason that they wanted to herd these same Jews to Palestine.

The mounting influx of Jewish refugees had quite dramatically changed the demography of Palestine, and the balance had

begun to shift remarkably in favour of the Jews. Jews, who comprised only 4 per cent of the total Palestinian population in 1882, formed 13 per cent in 1922, 28 per cent in 1935 and about 30 per cent in 1939. By 1947 there were 608,230 Jews in Palestine compared with about 1,364,330 Arabs. Not all the Jews remained in Palestine, where harsh living conditions were hard to bear, and there were periods where more Jews actually left Palestine than entered. But of those who did remain there emerged the future Jewish-Israeli leadership: David Ben Gurion (Gruen), who had arrived from Poland in 1906 and later became the first Prime Minister of Israel; Levi Eshkol (Shkolnik) who had arrived from the Ukraine in 1909 and later became the third Prime Minister; and Golda Meir (Meyerson), who had arrived from America in 1921 and would succeed Eshkol to the premiership.

Demographic modification aside, a geographical transformation was also under way in Palestine; for Jews not only poured into the country but also bought large tracts of its land. For this purpose, The Jewish National Fund (*Keren Ha'Kayemet* in Hebrew) was established in 1901 with the task of buying land in Palestine, and in 1908 the economist and agronomist Arthur Ruppin set up at Jaffa the first Zionist office, which bought land from Arab landlords. So successful was the Jewish policy of purchasing land, that in 1935 the quasi-religious politician and leader of the Arab Palestinians, the Grand Mufti of Jerusalem, Hajj Amin al-Husseini, had to issue a *fatwa*, which is a decree or a religious order, defining Arabs who sold land to Jews as apostates to be denied burial in Moslem cemeteries. This was to no avail, even though the growing demand led to the value of property in Palestine soaring, Jews had mustered the money and bought large tracts of it. It is estimated that between 1920 and 1939 Jews acquired 845,198 acres in Palestine, most of which belonged to absentee landowners, and towards the end of the 1930s they possessed around 1,533,400 acres. From a modest



fifty-five Jewish settlements in 1920, the number had rocketed to 218 in 1939.

It perhaps deserves mention that the Jews did not, as is sometimes alleged, 'rob' the Arabs or 'steal' their land, but rather they bought it from them for hefty sums of money. As for the Arab aristocracy of landowners who had sold the land to the Jews, they did so voluntarily and with open eyes, and they must have known that for the Arab peasants who had been living on their lands for generations this would be a devastating blow. Indeed it proved to be so, for when the new owners of the land voluntarily became hewers of wood and drawers of water and worked the land themselves (they called it: *Avoda Ivrit*, 'Jewish work') – as a means of recovering contact with nature and also disproving the slander of their detractors that they were fit only for commerce and not for labour – they inevitably deprived Palestinian labourers of employment.

What made matters far worse and increased the anxieties of the Arabs of Palestine, was the fact that the massive influx of Jews and their purchase of large tracts of land in Palestine was accompanied by a gradual commitment of the British government to the idea of establishing a 'national home' for the Jews in Palestine. Most notable was the Balfour Declaration, approved by the British cabinet and enshrined in a letter dated 2 November 1917, which was sent by the British Foreign Secretary Arthur James Balfour to a prominent member of the Jewish community in England, Lord Rothschild. In this short but most significant letter the British minister expressed the support of His Majesty's Government for the idea of establishing a 'national home' – a term undefined by international law and a complete novelty – for the Jewish people. The subsequent commitment that this should not 'prejudice the civil and religious rights of existing non-Jewish communities in Palestine' did little to dispel the fear of the Arabs for their own future. Indeed, it angered them, for they, who were referred to in this 117-word letter as the 'exist-

ing non-Jewish communities in Palestine', formed at this time the overwhelming majority of the population – they made up around 87 per cent of the total population while the Jews were only 13 per cent – and the land of Palestine was theirs in the generally accepted sense of the word. What the Arabs feared, and with hindsight we know that they were right, was that as soon as a large Jewish population had built up in Palestine, the idea of a Jewish 'national home' would turn into that of a Jewish state. The Arabs, though, found some comfort in the joint Anglo-French declaration which was issued simultaneously in Palestine, Syria and Iraq on 7 November 1918, stating that 'The goal envisaged by France and Great Britain . . . is the complete and final liberation of the peoples who have for so long been oppressed by the Turks . . . and the setting up of national governments'. This was taken by the Arabs as a pledge for Arab independence in Palestine.

The British promise to the Jews of a 'national home' in Palestine was turned into an international commitment when the League of Nations, on 24 July 1922, reiterated the British pledge in a document which assigned a mandate of Palestine to Britain. On this Arthur Koestler commented in *Promise and Fulfilment*: 'The League requisitioned Palestine from its [Arab] owners to provide the Jews with a permanent abode, and appointed Britain to act as billeting officer'.<sup>3</sup> The promise to the Arabs expressed in the joint Anglo-French declaration of 7 November 1918 was all but forgotten. For the Jews the pledge of the international community was a significant political victory, for after all, the Balfour Declaration was without legal force because Britain had no sovereign rights over Palestine, had no authority to dispose of the land and thus her declaration was no more than a statement of its intentions. But now with the Balfour Declaration incorporated into the Palestine mandate, the British promise had received explicit international recognition. One can only be puzzled by how little thought was devoted to the Arab Palestinians, who

were the overwhelming majority in Palestine, and by how much was promised to the Jews, who were the minority, by both the British and later the international community in issuing, respectively, the 1917 Balfour Declaration and the 1922 British Mandate. The explanation seems to be that those who endorsed these critical documents and sealed the future of the two communities, had all been nurtured on biblical reminiscences of the eternal bond between the children of Israel and their promised land, and that they knew next to nothing of the Arab community of Palestine.

It is ironic that in their growing opposition to the Jews, the Arabs of Palestine were now led by prominent Palestinian clans and families who had sold their lands to the Jews through middlemen at high profits, and thus visited on the Palestinians the very problems which were now causing such tensions with the Jews. In fact, tensions between the two peoples had already risen dangerously in the early 1920s. On 3 April 1920, for example, which was the first day of Passover, Arabs attacked Jews in the old town of Jerusalem – these were called the Nebi Mussa disturbances – and on 1 May 1921, disturbances in Jaffa led to the killing of nearly 200 Jews and 120 Arabs. A few quiet years followed, but then on 23 August 1929, Jews and Arabs clashed in Jerusalem and the next day Arabs slaughtered fifty-nine men, women and children in Hebron. Arab dissatisfaction reached its peak between 1936 and 1939, a period known as ‘The Arab Rebellion’, when they began a general strike which soon turned into clashes, mainly with the British who had allowed Jews to enter Palestine, purchase land and establish the infrastructure for a future state.

The British authorities, the caretakers of Palestine, crushed the revolt, but overall they failed to calm the situation in Palestine, because their tendency to veer first one way and then the other, and their policy of appeasement which in practice meant endorsing the claims of the stronger invited even more violence

from the parties involved. Thus when the British had allowed Jewish immigrants to enter Palestine they angered the Arabs, and in their attempts to appease the latter they angered the Jews. British attempts to find a way out of the dilemma and offer solutions to which both Arab and Jew could agree came to little. In August 1936, for example, the British government entrusted Lord Peel (grandson of Sir Robert Peel, the nineteenth-century British Prime Minister) with the mission of recommending a solution to the problem in Palestine. After investigating the matter, Peel published his report on 7 July 1937. It proposed that Palestine should be partitioned between Arabs and Jews. While the Jews accepted the proposal, the Arabs of Palestine rejected it; they were not prepared to give up Palestine either in part or in whole, which in retrospect seems to be a grave error of judgement, for their insistence on having all the land resulted, as we shall later see, in their losing it all.

In the summer of 1939, with increasing tension in Palestine, the British summoned an Arab–Jewish conference to try and sort out their differences; but the conference quickly broke down. The British government then imposed its own solution, expressed in a White Paper of May 1939 stating that a final batch of 75,000 Jews was to be admitted to Palestine between 1939 and 1944, and that, after this, further entry of Jews would be subject to Arab approval. Additionally, it empowered the High Commissioner of Palestine to prohibit the sale of land by Arabs to Jews in specified areas. The White Paper caused an uproar among the Jews, who turned on the British and accused them of retreating from previous pledges. Here without doubt the British government had miscalculated, for they were imposing restrictions on Jewish immigration to Palestine at a time when Jews in Europe were the first targets of the Nazis. As a result of the White Paper, the Jewish underground organizations, including Irgun but mainly the small but violent Lehi (the so called ‘Stern

Gang'), viciously attacked the British in Palestine soon rendering the mandate unworkable.

At the close of the Second World War and with the ending of their rule in India, Britain's primary motive for staying in the Middle East had gone, and there seemed little reason for the British to pursue a policy in Palestine – 'a hell disaster' as Winston Churchill once described it – that imposed financial burdens (there were 100,000 British troops there), was difficult to implement, and was increasingly unpopular both at home and abroad. A growing number of British politicians – and they had broad British public support – now urged the government to lay the Mandate at the feet of the United Nations Organization and thereafter evacuate the country with which Britain had no connection or tradition. And indeed, even before a final decision regarding Palestine was made, the British government on 31 January 1947 ordered the evacuation from Palestine of all British women, children and male civilians in non-essential jobs. About two weeks later, on 14 February 1947, the British Foreign Secretary announced that his government intended to refer the Mandate of Palestine back to the two-year-old United Nations, the successor of the League of Nations; he repeated the announcement to the House of Commons on 18 February, and it was debated on the 25th.

'The Palestine question' was put on the agenda of the UN, whose assembly met on 28 April and on 15 May to discuss the matter. It then decided to appoint a special committee, called UNSCOP, to investigate conditions in Palestine and decide what recommendations should be made to Britain as Mandatory Power. The committee duly arrived in Jerusalem on 16 June, stayed for five weeks and met Jewish representatives; the Arab Higher Committee, the body representing the Arabs of Palestine, boycotted it, arguing that the departure of the British should be followed by one thing only, which was the establishment of an Arab state on the entire land of Palestine. The boycott was a grave

error of judgement, for the absence of the Arab side made it easier for the Jews to put a forceful case before the UN committee for partitioning the land with the Arabs and having their own state on part of Palestine. It is sometimes alleged that, in fact, the real intention of the Jews was to have the whole of Palestine (including parts allotted to the Arabs), but that they wished to obtain it in stages – first get what they could from the UN and then expand it by force. This claim is supported, for example, by a letter of Ben Gurion to his wife, where he says: ‘Establish a Jewish state at once, even if it is not in the whole land . . . the rest will come in the course of time’.<sup>4</sup> That the Jewish hidden agenda was indeed to occupy all of Palestine was also believed by leading Palestinians. At a meeting in September 1947 with a British official in Lebanon, where he was in exile, the leader of the Arab Palestinians, Hajj Amin al-Husseini, said: ‘No form of partition . . . would finally satisfy the Zionists. Whatever they got would merely be a springboard from which to leap on more’.

Back in Geneva, the UN committee produced a report of sixty-seven printed foolscap pages in which it recommended that the Mandate for Palestine should be terminated at the earliest practicable date. But the committee was divided with regard to the nature of the regime which should be set up after the British departure. A minority of three suggested a federal state, and a majority of eight was in favour of passing a ‘Judgement of Solomon’ which would partition the land between Jews and Arabs but maintain the economic unity of Palestine.

On 29 November 1947 the matter was brought before the General Assembly of the UN, which voted 33 to 13, with 10 abstentions, in favour of Resolution 181 to partition Palestine. Britain abstained, all the Islamic Asian countries voted against, and both the USA and USSR – the latter regarding Britain as a greater menace than the USA in world politics – voted in favour. According to the UN partition resolution, the 10,000 square miles of Palestine was to be divided between Arabs – then

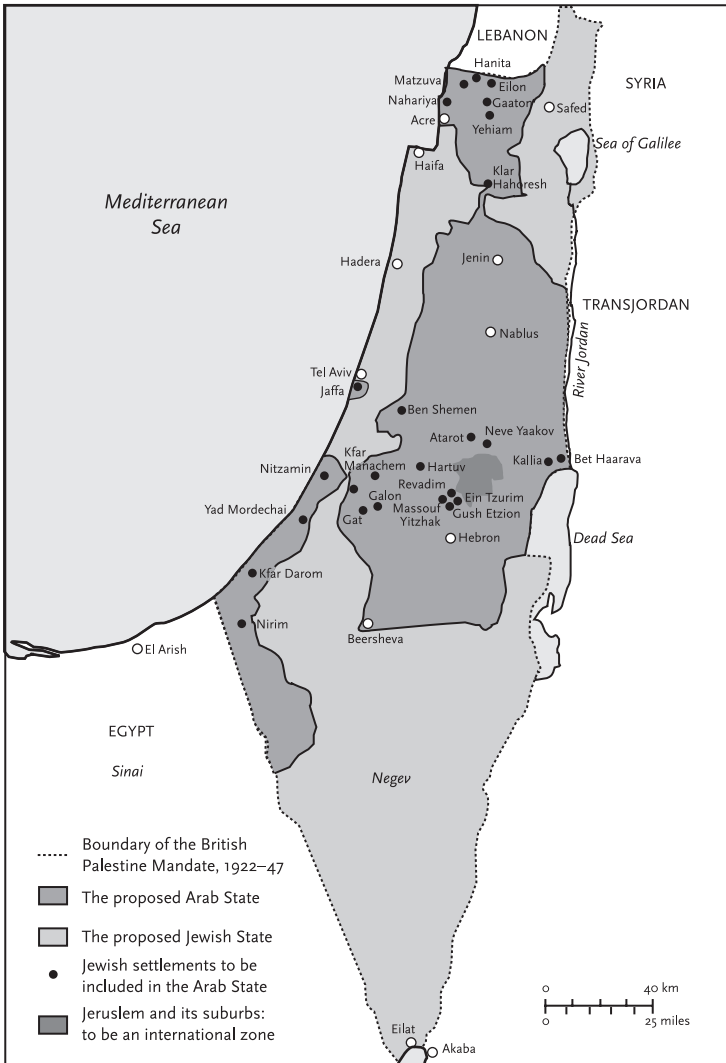
numbering 1,364,330 including 127,000 Bedouin – who were to retain 4,300 square miles, and Jews – then numbering 608,230 – who were allotted 5,700 square miles. Jerusalem and Bethlehem were to come under United Nations control.

For the Jews this was a significant political victory, which could be compared in magnitude only to their success in obtaining the Balfour Declaration of 1917. For the Arabs of Palestine, however, the vote for partition was a devastating blow; they vowed to oppose it by force and called for a three-day protest in Palestine. In Haifa, where 70,000 Arabs were living alongside 70,000 Jews, an Arab gathering took place where a leading Palestinian, Sheikh Sabri Abdeen, announced: “If the Jews are going to take our land then by God we will throw them into the sea” and he pointed to the Mediterranean which was only a few hundred metres away to the cheering, clapping and shooting-in-the-air of the crowd’.<sup>5</sup> In such a charged atmosphere, the more moderate Palestinian Arabs such as the Nashashibi family (many of this moderate clan had previously been assassinated by fellow Arabs during the 1936–9 Arab rebellion), the Nablus group and the communists who were more willing to accept partition were silenced.

With the benefit of hindsight, it is obvious that the failure of the Arabs to accept the 1947 UN partition proposal was a colossal historical mistake, as was their previous rejection of the Peel partition plan of 1937. If they had accepted either, they could have had an independent Palestinian state alongside Israel. But this, as we know, was not to be the case.

## CIVIL WAR IN PALESTINE

Although significant, the UN partition resolution did not envisage the immediate creation of either a Jewish or an Arab state on the land of Palestine. Yet, rather than easing tension, the resolution to partition the land and the subsequent British decision,



Map 1 Palestine 1947: the UN Partition Plan



made on 4 December 1947, to depart on Friday 14 May 1948, had increased tensions between the peoples of Palestine and 'it was as if on a signal Arabs and Jews squeezed the trigger and exchanged fire'<sup>6</sup> On 15 December 1947, Lieutenant General Sir Alan Cunningham, the British High Commissioner for Palestine, sent a top-secret memorandum to the British Colonial Secretary Arthur Creech-Jones, outlining the situation in Palestine in fearful detail. 'Situation now is deteriorating', he wrote, 'into a series of reprisals and counter-reprisals between Jews and Arabs, in which many innocent lives are being lost, the tempo of which may accelerate'.<sup>7</sup>

The initial phase following the UN resolution to partition Palestine was characterized mainly by Arab attacks on Jewish convoys and street fighting on the Jaffa–Tel Aviv border and in the Old City of Jerusalem. This was not yet a full-blown civil war but rather skirmishes and a vicious circle where an action was followed by a reprisal with disturbances and clashes between Jews and Arabs spreading to all parts of Palestine.

With all its energy directed to the evacuation and removal of some 210,000 tons of stores and a huge retinue of colonial administrators, the British in Palestine, under the command of Sir Gordon Macmillan, chose to stand aside and to protect only their own evacuation routes. Britain now simply washed its hands of the problems of Palestine and refused to assume responsibility for implementing the UN partition plan. And with the 'policeman' standing aside, the condition of Palestine deteriorated into anarchy, with Jews and Arabs fighting out their differences in what gradually slid into an all-out civil war which was to last about five months.

### **The opposing forces at the outbreak of the civil war**

On the eve of the civil war in Palestine, Jewish forces comprised Haganah, which was the largest underground organization of the

Yishuv, the Jewish community, and two smaller dissident organizations: the Irgun Zvai Leumi, better known as ‘the Irgun’ and *Lochamai Herut Yisrael*, known also as ‘the Lehi’ (or ‘The Stern Gang’). The Haganah comprised 45,000 men and women, about 2,100 of them in the Palmach, making up the striking force of the organization. In the Irgun and the Lehi there were about 3,000 fighters and, although independent of Ben Gurion’s Haganah, the two small organizations often coordinated their actions with the Haganah, as they did in the notorious battle at Deir Yassin. Expecting a strong Arab response to the UN resolution to partition the land of Palestine, the Jewish leadership under Ben Gurion began mobilizing the whole community, and just a day after the UN resolution it issued a decree calling on men and women between the ages of 17 and 25 (those born between 1922 and 1930) to service. On 22 January 1948, the Jewish leadership ordered that all those born between 1931 and 1932 were not to leave the country; a month later all those born between 1908 and 1932 were ordered to come forward and enlist. On 3 February, all Jews aged between 19 and 23 (born between 1925 and 1929) were called to serve. The new recruits were not ordered to join a specific underground organization – this could have caused an immediate controversy – rather to enlist to *Sherut Ha’am* (literally: ‘Service of the Nation’).

The Arab force in the civil war was made up of four components. First was the Arab Liberation Army (ALA), which had around 4,000 volunteers from Palestine and the neighbouring Arab countries, mainly Iraq and Syria. The ALA was organized and equipped by the Military Committee of the Arab League and was trained at the Syrian training centre, Katana. It marched into Palestine on 20 January 1948 from Jordan, and operated from two locations: Galilee, where it had two battalions comprising between 1,500 and 2,000 men; and Samaria, just west of the Jordan river, where it deployed about the same number of men.

The second element of the Arab force consisted of between

1,000 and 1,500 volunteers from the 'Moslem Brothers' and Egyptian youth organizations who had crossed from Egypt to Palestine, and operated in the southern part of the country and in and around Majdal (now called Ashkelon) and Yibne (now called Yebne).

The third element, some 5,000 men, was led by Abdall Quader al-Husseini, a relative of the Mufti of Jerusalem and perhaps the most charismatic and ablest Arab leader in Palestine; he was operating in the Jerusalem, Ramallah and Jericho areas. Husseini's force comprised irregular bands and masses of villagers – the Palestinian element was strong – and it also had some European elements, that is volunteers from Britain, Yugoslavia and Germany who had joined the Arab Palestinians in their fight against the Jews. Another Arab group, 3,000 at most, was led by Hassan Saleme, who had been trained in Germany, had been parachuted into Palestine, and was operating in the Jaffa-Lydd-Ramleh area. All in all, the number of Arab para regulars, irregulars and volunteers can be estimated at 25,000–30,000 men; their weakness, though, was a lack of cooperation and central control.

### **Aims and fighting**

The principal aim of the Jews in Palestine in the period immediately after the UN resolution to partition Palestine, was to gain effective control over the territory allotted to them by the UN and to secure communication with thirty-three Jewish settlements which, according to the UN plan, fell outside the proposed Jewish state. For although the UN had partitioned the land between Jews and Arab Palestinians, there were still Jewish settlements which were to remain within the Arab area and, on the other hand, Arab villages on land allotted to the Jews. In contrast to Arab villages within Jewish areas, which were self-reliant, the Jewish settlements relied heavily on outside supplies,

which made the keeping open of routes a necessity for them. Another aim of the Jewish forces was to prepare the ground for what seemed to be an inevitable invasion of neighbouring Arab regular armies the moment the British left Palestine. The General Staff of the Jewish forces devised what became known as ‘Plan Dalet’ (*Tochnit Dalet*), the principal objective of which was to consolidate control over areas allotted to the Jewish State and also to seize strategic positions to make it possible to block regular Arab armies in case they marched into Palestine. What is significant about ‘Plan Dalet’ – it was distributed to field commanders on 29 February and became a directive to all units on 10 March 1948 – is that, apart from envisaging the occupation of strategic positions, it also allowed for the occupation of Arab villages, towns and cities and, where necessary, the expulsion of their inhabitants. This, we should comment here, was a blank cheque for Jewish forces to expel Arab Palestinians, as indeed took place in the ensuing days of the war.

The Palestinians’ strategic aim during the civil war was negative in nature, namely to prevent the implementation of the partition plan by disrupting and strangling Jewish lines of communication, and by cutting off Jewish settlements from localities and positions that were already occupied. These opposing aims of Jews and Arabs led to the ‘battle of the roads’ which raged in Palestine during the first half of 1948, with Jewish forces attempting to gain control of the communications roads and the Arabs of Palestine seeking to prevent them from achieving this.

In the initial stages of the civil war the Arabs gained the upper hand and succeeded in dictating the pattern of the struggle. By March 1948 they had cut off the entire Negev – allotted to the Jews by the UN – from the coastal plain, as well as most of Western Galilee and the Jerusalem area; they also succeeded in isolating many of the Jewish settlements within these regions from one another. So successful were these operations that the Arabs of Palestine came close to reaching their principal aim

when, in March 1948, British Colonial Secretary Creech-Jones told the British House of Commons that the Palestine situation was 'rapidly becoming insoluble' and on 19 March proposed that the UN rescind partition in favour of trusteeship. The US administration, too, frustrated by the deteriorating situation in Palestine, had joined the British call and declared, in mid-March, that since partition was hard to establish, a trusteeship should replace it. Only the Soviet Union remained constantly in favour of partition possibly because Moscow calculated that the creation of a Jewish State would undermine Western relations with the Arab States and thus provide for the Soviet Union a means of extending its influence in the Middle East, or even that a socialist Israel would become an ally. Anyway, the British-American view, aimed at replacing partition with trusteeship, dismayed the Jews, who saw their dream of establishing a state on the land allotted by the UN slipping away.

But soon the civil war began to take a new shape. In April 1948, with the war at its height, an attempt by the Arab Liberation Army to cut off the Haifa region and the Valley of Jezreel from the coastal plain failed (4 April) and Jewish forces proceeded with their own offensive, which proved to be eminently successful. In central Palestine, they broke open the road to Jerusalem ('Operation Nachshon', 3–15 April) and this allowed supplies of food and ammunition to get through to the Jews in the city. Elsewhere, all Arab towns and villages, and the mixed cities within the territory designated for the Jewish state, were overrun in rapid succession. Tiberias was captured on 18 April, and the vital port of Haifa fell into Jewish hands on 22–3 April. Most of Haifa's 70,000 Arabs fled, many to Acre, others to Lebanon. Between 25 and 27 April, Irgun forces attacked the all-Arab town of Jaffa, which was meant to be included in the future Arab state; at first they were checked by British troops, but once the British had left, Irgun forces took the town (13 May 1948) whose original 90,000 inhabitants were reduced to only 5,000

– most of them fled to Gaza by sea. In northern Palestine, the town of Safed was occupied, and on the night of 13–14 May all Western Galilee came under Jewish control. The all-Arab town of Acre – like Jaffa it was meant to be included in the future Arab state – was besieged by Jewish forces and capitulated on 17 May. The Arab forces in Palestine were now bewildered by defeat, and retreated, with their leadership confused and disorganized.

### **Massacres and refugees**

The civil war in Palestine was vicious, cruel and littered with atrocities. It involved immense human suffering and a degree of blatant brutality never before seen in Jewish–Arab relations in Palestine, which had usually seen the two peoples living side-by-side in relative peace. On 31 December 1947, taking revenge for the killing of six of their fellows by the Irgun, Arabs attacked and killed thirty-nine Jews at the Haifa oil refineries. The Haganah responded in kind, attacking the village of Blad-el-Sheikh, where it killed more than sixty Arabs, including women and children. At the beginning of February 1948, more than ten Arabs and two British policemen were killed in an explosion near the Jaffa Gate in Jerusalem and, on 22 February, sixty Jews were killed by a car-bomb explosion on Jerusalem's Ben Yehuda street. The Jewish leader David Ben-Gurion, visiting the scene, blamed Jewish thugs for this. As he put it: 'Such a destruction . . . I could not recognize the streets . . . But I could not forget that our thugs and murderers (meaning members of the Irgun and the Lehi) had opened the way', that is, brought about this Arab reaction by their own terrorist actions.<sup>8</sup> On 11 March, seventeen Jews were killed and forty were injured by a bomb in the courtyard of the Jewish Agency in Jerusalem and, on 9 April, 110 Palestinians – men, women and children – were killed by Jews in the small village of Deir Yassin just west of Jerusalem, at least twenty-five of them being massacred in cold blood. Four days later, on 13 April, the

Arabs took revenge by attacking a Jewish convoy of medical staff on its way to Mount Scopus, leaving seventy-seven dead.

What is so significant about the civil war in Palestine is that it was then that what became known as 'the Palestinian refugee problem' started. With its leadership and the middle class – those who had the money to do so – leaving Palestine to take what they believed to be temporary refuge in neighbouring Arab countries, and with the Jews advising the poorer Palestinians to follow suit and using force to expel the others – the Arab Palestinians moved out of Palestine. Exaggerations by Arab leadership of Jewish atrocities, as happened after the events at Deir Yassin, was also a catalyst, leading the Palestinians to flee whenever a Jewish soldier was seen approaching their village.<sup>9</sup>

The demographic scales were now tilting in favour of the Jews, and with the *en masse* departure of the Arabs, Jews became the majority in the land of Palestine. While there was no explicit decision by the Jewish leadership to expel the Palestinians, there was nevertheless a tacit agreement that this should be done. In a meeting with military commanders, Prime Minister Ben Gurion said: 'In each attack [against Arabs] it is necessary to give a decisive blow, ruining the place, kicking away the inhabitants'.<sup>10</sup> It is estimated that about 750,000 Palestinians left Palestine during the war (160,000 remained behind) and their homes were taken by new Jewish immigrants; as Ben Gurion recorded in his war diary: 'New immigrants [we] put in Arab houses'.<sup>11</sup> This was the method the Jewish leadership employed to absorb the 5,500 new Jewish immigrants who, in spite of the ongoing civil war, poured copiously into Palestine.

Although highly successful, the period which had followed the UN partition resolution was for the Jews in Palestine, many of whom were European refugees, traumatic. During the six months from November 1947 to mid-1948, 1,308 Jewish soldiers and 1,100 civilians perished.<sup>12</sup> This is a very high toll,

given the relatively low number of Jews in Palestine and the relatively short duration of the fighting.

## PROCLAMATION, END OF BRITISH MANDATE AND REGIONAL WAR

On 14 May 1948, Prime Minister David Ben Gurion recorded in his war diary: 'At four in the afternoon the Jewish independence was proclaimed and the state [of Israel] was established', and he added 'Its fate is in the hands of the armed forces'. From the thirty-two-minute ceremony where he had declared the establishment of Israel, Ben Gurion went straight to the 'Red House', the headquarters of the Israeli forces on Tel Aviv beach, to discuss with his military commanders the deteriorating situation. Declaring a state was a bold and courageous move, given the threat of Arab neighbouring states to prevent by force the establishment of a Jewish state, even on that part of Palestine which had been allotted to the Jews by the UN. It also seemed, at the time, a suicidal move, given that US Secretary of State George Marshall had warned the Jews that America would not consider itself responsible for the consequences of their declaring a state and would not 'bail you out' if attacked by Arab neighbours.<sup>13</sup>

That Friday night, just half an hour before midnight, Lieutenant-General Sir Alan Cunningham, the seventh and last British High Commissioner for Palestine, sailed in HMS *Euryalus* from the bay of Haifa for England. The birth of the State of Israel and the end of more than thirty years of British rule in Palestine took place on a single day. In fact, the state of Israel was proclaimed even *before* the official termination of the Mandate. The reason being that the Mandate was due to expire on Friday at midnight, and because this was during the Jewish Sabbath, it was decided to bring forward the proclamation ceremony. These two events were significant for two main reasons. First, they came to



symbolize the transformation of the status of Jews in Palestine from a community to an independent state, soon to be recognized by the international community. Second, these two events were the catalyst which transformed a strictly localized conflict – until the departure of the British and the proclamation of Israel the Jewish–Arab struggle had remained essentially a communal war – into a full-blown regional confrontation which also involved neighbouring Arab states and their regular armies.

That night, American President Harry Truman recognized the Jewish state. This was a major development, and vital for Israel, because neither the UN decision to partition Palestine nor Ben Gurion's unilateral declaration of independence gave any international status to the Jewish state. A recognition by a superpower – as the United States was after the Second World War – meant that, at least symbolically, the newly established state of Israel was accepted into the family of nations. At five in the morning on 15 May, while giving his positive reaction to the American recognition in a Tel Aviv radio studio, Ben Gurion could hear the Egyptian bomber planes overhead.<sup>14</sup> By now the Arab Legion, consisting of four well-trained regiments, was already on the march into the West Bank, an area allotted to the Palestinians by the UN. It was dispatched to there personally by King Abdullah who just a few minutes before midnight arrived at the eastern side of the Allenby bridge. With the formal expiry, at midnight of the British Mandate, the King took out his pistol, fired a shot into the air and shouting "Forward" he dispatched his troops across the Jordan river to the West Bank. That day, which was a Saturday, the Egyptian government sent a telegram to the President of the UN Security Council, announcing that Egyptian armed forces had entered Palestine and were engaged in 'an armed intervention'. On Sunday 16 May the Arab League sent a cablegram making similar statements on behalf of the Arab states.

By world standards the war which was now developing in Palestine-Israel was a small-scale, primitive confrontation

conducted by poorly equipped and ill trained units. For his invasion of Russia – ‘Operation Barbarossa’ – in 1941, Hitler had assembled 160 divisions; in the Palestine war the biggest unit to take part in battle was a brigade, and actual fighting often involved smaller units. The German armoured strength in the Barbarossa invasion totalled 3,550 tanks; in the Palestine war the Israelis had no tanks at all and the Arabs had only a few primitive ones. Nevertheless, for the parties involved, in particular for the Israelis, the war was perceived, rightly or wrongly, as a life-or-death struggle. It was a war fought all over the country in separate battles – a see-saw struggle with many changes of fortune.

It is worth looking at the forces, Israeli and Arab, which were now confronting each other in Palestine, to demolish what is perhaps the biggest myth with regard to this first all-out Arab–Israeli war.

### **Forces and weapons**

Contrary to popular belief, the 1948 war between Israeli forces and the invading regular Arab armies was not one between ‘the few [Israelis]’ and ‘the many [Arabs]’, or, as it is often put, a clash between David (Israel) and Goliath (the Arabs). The root of this popular, though utterly erroneous, notion lay in the Israeli practice of referring to the potential of the Arabs rather than to the actual number of troops they put into the field. By confusing the issue, the Israeli leadership, in its war of words and attempts to gain the sympathy of the world and its own people, had for many years knowingly ignored the fact that ratios among adversaries do not merely reflect population ratios, and that a high degree of manpower mobilization can make up for the quantitative demographic inferiority of a small nation like Israel. Indeed, during the 1948 war, Israel had mobilized almost its entire resources and ablest population, while the more

numerous Arabs had utilized only a small fraction of their huge potential.

The number of Israeli troops committed to battle on the eve of the Arab invasion was more or less equal to that of the Arabs, but then, while the number of Arab troops increased only slightly, the number of Israelis grew steadily and dramatically. A breakdown shows that the total strength of the invading Arab armies was about 23,500 troops, made up of 10,000 in the Egyptian army, 4,500 in the Arab Legion of Transjordan, 3,000 Syrians, 3,000 Iraqis and 3,000 Lebanese and Arab Liberation Army (ALA) troops; there was also a token contingent from Saudi Arabia. Compared with these numbers, Israel, as Ben Gurion notes in his diary of the war, had committed a total of 29,677 men and women to battle. But then, with the progressive mobilization of Israeli society and the average monthly arrival of 10,300 new immigrants, the number of available fighters steadily grew. On 4 June 1948, the number of Israeli troops was, according to Ben Gurion, 40,825; and on 17 July it grew to 63,586. On 7 October 1948, these numbers swelled to 88,033, and by 28 October reached more than 92,275. On 2 December the number of Israeli soldiers on the field was 106,900; on 23 December it stood at 107,652, and on 30 December the number had risen to 108,300 (10,259 of them women). Jewish volunteers from abroad – *Mahal* – also joined, and although their number was relatively low, at most 5,000, they nevertheless provided valuable technical expertise. By the end of the war Israel's fighting force was larger in absolute terms than that of the Arabs, and as John Bagot Glubb correctly observed:

the common impression that the heroic little Israeli army was fighting against tremendous odds (one army against seven armies was one of the expressions used) was not altogether correct. The Israeli forces were, generally speaking, twice as numerous as all the Arab armies put together.<sup>15</sup>

In weaponry and firepower, however, the Arabs had a clear edge. The total inventory of the Haganah at the start of the war consisted of 22,000 rifles of various calibres, 1,550 light and medium machine guns, 11,000 largely home-made submachine guns, 195 three-inch calibre infantry mortars, 682 two-inch mortars, 86 PIAT (Projector Infantry Anti-Tank – a crude man-portable device of armour-piercing explosive charges) and five old 65mm field guns. A few tanks and aircraft still awaited shipment in Europe. Egypt, according to Israeli estimates, had 48 field guns, 25–30 armoured cars, 10–20 tanks, and 21–25 aircraft. Iraq had 48 field guns, 25–30 armoured cars, and 20 aircraft. Syria had 24 field guns, 36 armoured cars, 10–20 tanks and 14 aircraft. Jordan had 24 field guns and 45 armoured cars; and Lebanon 8 field guns and 9 armoured cars.

But as in manpower, so with weaponry; as the war progressed the balance steadily tipped in favour of the Israelis. A fund-raising mission by Golda Meir to America raised \$50 million, which was used to buy arms, and ships loaded with weapons were purchased and sent to Israel by such people as Ehud Avriel. In New York, a team headed by Teddy Kollek – later the long-serving Mayor of Jerusalem – bought aeroplanes, took them to pieces and, with the help of the Mafia, and under the nose of the FBI, shipped the precious weapons to Israel. Israelis not only purchased weapons, but they also took measures to prevent the Arabs from adding arms to their own arsenals. In Bari, Italy, on 9 April 1948, Israeli agents executed 'Operation Shalal 1' and sunk the ship *Lino*, which was packed with 8,000 rifles designated for Syria. Also in Italy, on 18 September 1948, Israeli agents broke into a garage where they destroyed four aeroplanes which were awaiting shipment to Egypt. Additionally, Israel developed its own weapons industry, which included chemical and biological weapons.<sup>16</sup>

There were, apart from manpower and equipment, other factors which affected the character of the battle. The invading Arab

armies had the advantage of being fresh in comparison with the Israelis, who were exhausted after five months of bloody civil war in Palestine. Moreover, the invading armies were relatively homogenous, with commanders and troops communicating in the same language, compared with the Israelis who suffered language difficulties. The weather also played an important part. The summer of 1948 was extremely hot and harsh, and Israeli troops, many of whom had just arrived from cold Europe, found it too oppressive.<sup>17</sup> While the invading Arab armies had the tactical advantage of surprise, the Israelis had the advantage of interior lines of communications and fortified settlements which provided useful bases of operations.

Turning to the fighting itself, we see not only that the Arab invaders were inferior in numbers to the Israelis, but also that they failed to coordinate their moves and to prepare themselves properly for war. They also underestimated the determination of their opponents, all of which explains their total failure to dislodge the Israelis.

## **Fighting**

The invading Arab armies of Syria, Iraq, Lebanon, Egypt, Transjordan and a contingent force from Saudi Arabia had started from different directions, heading towards the heart of the Jewish state and the lands allotted to the Palestinians by the UN in November 1947. Had they coordinated their operations better and concentrated their offensive, the outcome of the struggle could have been different. In the event, however, there was coordination neither of operational plans nor of movement and concentration of forces, reflecting both the lack of common interest of the invaders and the divided purposes in the minds of the Arab leaders, who were suspicious of each other's intentions. All regarded Jordan's King Abdullah with intense suspicion, and rightly so, for the King was far more concerned to seize the land

west of the river Jordan, which had been allotted to the Palestinians, than to destroy Israel. Abdullah even dispatched his Prime Minister to the British Foreign Minister to explain that his intention was only to take the West Bank to which Bevin replied: 'It seems the obvious thing to do. But don't go and invade the areas allotted to the Jews'.<sup>18</sup> The British commander of the Arab Legion later confirmed that the Jordanian troops were indeed instructed 'To occupy the central and largest area of Palestine allotted to the Arabs by the 1947 partition'.<sup>19</sup> This is a most significant statement, for it shows that rather than five Arab armies attacking the Israelis, there had been only four – Egypt, Syria, Iraq and Lebanon – and rather than intending to destroy the newly born state of Israel, the Arab Legion had crossed the Jordan river with the aim of partitioning the land by seizing the territory allotted by the UN to the Palestinians.

Lack of coordination among the invading forces is reflected in testimonies of Arab troops who took part in this war. Mohsein Abdel Khalek, a captain in the Egyptian army and later a prime minister of that country, recalled how

The Jews were attacking us from the flank that the Iraqis were supposed to be protecting. We discovered that the Iraqi army had withdrawn, without even telling us. We had to shorten our lines, else the Egyptian army would have been destroyed. It was the turning point in the war.<sup>20</sup>

Thus, although Israel suffered war on three fronts, she fought in effect separate enemies among whom there was little coordination. The invading armies also suffered from lack of preparation – they had simply neglected to prepare themselves for such an operation. The Egyptian army, for example, which was considered the most powerful of all Arab regular armies, had less than two weeks to prepare itself for the war and everything had to be improvised in haste. Abdel Ghani Kanout, an Egyptian

officer during that war, recalled: 'We went to the front on horseback . . . we did not have enough food for the horses so we had to send them back during the war. So overnight my unit was transformed from a cavalry unit to an infantry unit'.<sup>21</sup> Worse still, the invading Arab armies had a poor opinion of the Jews and underestimated their strength and determination. Adel Sabit, a cousin of King Farouk and the liaison between the King and the Arab League, later recalled: 'We were complacently expecting the Jews to run away the moment they saw us . . . we thought it would be a pushover'. And Mourad Ghaleb, another Egyptian officer: 'We thought that the Jews were not courageous . . . not fighters'.<sup>22</sup> And Lieutenant-General John Bagot Glubb, the British commander of the Arab Legion: '[The Arabs] believed themselves to be a great military people, and regarded the Jews as a nation of shopkeepers. . . . [The Arabs] assumed that they would find no difficulty in defeating the Jews'.<sup>23</sup> The Israelis, however, determined to win the war – for they felt themselves with their backs to the wall – exploited the confusion on the Arab side, and after less than four weeks of fierce fighting they had managed to withstand the initial critical moments of the invasion.

While the fighting was still raging, important organizational and structural changes were taking place in the Israeli forces. Mobilization was completed, and on 31 May 1948 Prime Minister and Defence Minister Ben Gurion published an Order of the Day officially establishing the Israeli Defence Force (IDF, or *Tzhal* in Hebrew) as the sole armed force of the state. This meant that the Irgun and the Lehi – the dissident underground groups led, respectively, by Menachem Begin and a committee of Lehi members, Nathan Yelin Mor, Yisrael Eldad and Yitzhak Shamir – had to disband and its men and weapons to be incorporated into the IDF, the nucleus of which was the Haganah. Disarming the dissidents and restoring law-abiding habits – taking the law into one's own hands had become a custom hallowed by patriotism throughout the decades of British rule in Palestine – was not an

easy task for Ben Gurion's government. Indeed, the attempt to dissolve the dissident groups and divert their weapons to the IDF led to a severe deterioration of relations between these organizations and the government, to the point where a Jewish civil war seemed imminent. But this was avoided thanks to the willingness of Irgun's commander, Menachem Begin, to call off his troops and agree to their complete integration with the IDF; the Lehi would be disbanded in September 1948.

The first three crucial weeks of fierce fighting between Arabs and Israelis ended in a truce which was negotiated by the Swedish UN mediator Count Folke Bernadotte. The Arabs had objected to stopping the fighting on the grounds that the Israelis might exploit the respite to regroup, strengthen their defences and obtain weapons. The Israelis, on the other hand, welcomed the possibility of a truce so that they could snatch a breathing space and reorganize themselves. Fearing UN sanctions, the Arabs reluctantly accepted the truce which came into effect on 11 June 1948 at 10 a.m. Four days later on 15 June Ben Gurion recorded in his war diary the arrival of ten 75mm guns, ten light tanks with 37mm guns, nineteen 65mm guns and four 20mm automatic guns. During the truce a highly centralized command system was also set up, and from his office in Tel Aviv, Ben Gurion's orders passed through GHQ to the four regional commands – North, Centre, East and South – which were functioning as operational fronts.

As the time approached for the truce to expire, the Arab League Political Committee met in Cairo and decided, under pressure from the Egyptian Prime Minister Nokrashy Pasha, to renew the fighting with the Israelis. Efforts by the UN mediator Count Bernadotte to renew the truce failed, and he recorded in his diary: 'They [the Arabs] totally rejected my proposal to agree to prolong the truce'.<sup>24</sup> Upon realizing that the truce would not be renewed, the Israelis took the initiative and struck on 9 July, two days before the ceasefire was due to expire. Now – as the



Arabs rightly feared when they objected to having a truce – the Israelis were even better organized and equipped with new weapons.

Fighting – particularly concentrated in the area of Tel-Aviv – was raging for ten successive days during which the battle clearly went in Israel's favour. Led by a young military commander, Moshe Dayan, later a chief of staff of the Israeli army and defence minister, Israeli forces occupied the Arab towns of Lydda (11–12 July) and Ramleh (12 July) – both of which had been allotted to the Arabs by the UN Partition Plan – expelling their 50,000 inhabitants and thus making more space for settling new Jewish immigrants. This major expulsion of the Palestinians was carried out with the tacit approval of Israeli Premier Ben Gurion, as is recorded by Yitzhak Rabin – then a military commander who took part in the operation – in a piece which was censored from his published memoirs:

We walked outside [the headquarters], Ben Gurion accompanying us. Allon [the commander of central command] repeated his question: 'What is to be done with the [Arab] population [of Ramleh and Lydda]?' Ben Gurion waved his hand in a gesture which said: 'Drive them out!' Allon and I had a consultation. I agreed that it was essential to drive the inhabitants out. We took them on foot towards Bet Horon road. . . . The population did not leave willingly. There was no way of avoiding the use of force and warning shots in order to make the inhabitants march the ten to fifteen miles to the point where they met with the Arab Legion.<sup>25</sup>

One of those expelled was George Habash – years later the leader of the Palestinian terrorist organization PFLP:

They directed us to a specific road . . . there were road blocks manned by Israeli soldiers every 100 metres to make sure that

no one diverted. This went on until we arrived at the outskirts of Lydda (now Lod). There we found a large number of [Israeli] soldiers. They put us in rows and started searching each person, a body search . . . they were not just looking for weapons but also tried to take money.<sup>26</sup>

The expelled Arabs were not allowed back to their homes, for what the Israelis wanted was to have the land without its inhabitants so they could establish an exclusive Jewish community. In a meeting of the Israeli cabinet on 16 June 1948, Prime Minister Ben Gurion told the ten ministers who were present: 'War is war. We did not start the war. They did. Do we have to allow the enemy back so they could make war against us? They lost and fled and I will oppose their return also after the war'.<sup>27</sup>

On 19 July 1948, a second UN truce came into effect, but by this time the Israelis were well on the offensive, while the Arabs were exhausted and demoralized and had no alternative but to sue for a truce. Military commander Rabin recorded in his memoirs: '[The Arabs] did not incline to renew the war . . . we estimated that the Egyptians were not interested in renewing it'.<sup>28</sup> But to build on their previous successes, the Israelis now wished to continue the struggle and to fight on, especially in the Negev, which could provide Israel with much space to accommodate Jewish immigrants.

On the night of 15 October, under the command of Yigal Allon, an Israeli army launched – in breach of the truce – 'Operation Yoav' which was aimed at breaking into the Negev. Beersheva, the capital of the Negev, fell into their hands on 21 October, and two months later, on the night of 22–3 December, they attacked again; and later, on 5–10 March 1949, they attacked again in the Negev, reached Eilat and occupied it. This was significant for, by seizing Eilat, Israel had driven a wedge between the east and the west Arab world, thus preventing Egypt

from having a direct land bridge to Jordan. In the north of the country, during 29–31 October 1948, four Israeli brigades had penetrated into Lebanon – this was ‘Operation Hiram’ – and moved up to the Litani river, destroying on its way the Arab Liberation Army, as well as Lebanese and Syrian units.

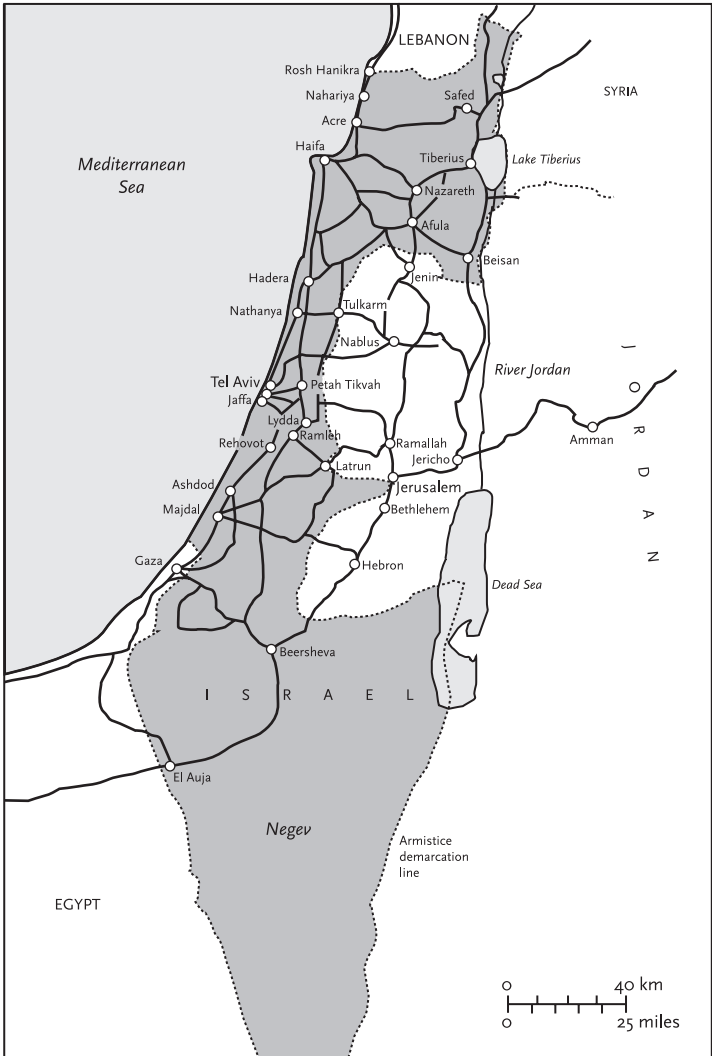
All in all the war lasted one year, three months and ten days and cost Israel \$500 million, compared with \$300 million for the Arabs. There had been three separate rounds of fighting between December 1947 and March 1949, interrupted by two truces imposed by the UN. The Israeli forces occupied about 2,500 square miles of Arab land, which was added to the 5,600 square miles allocated to them by the UN in November 1947. According to the UN partition resolution, about 55 per cent of the land was to be given to the Jews and 45 per cent to the Arabs, but when the war ended Israel controlled almost 80 per cent of the land. Israel – odd though it seems – had managed to keep these occupied territories without serious protest or international outcry – this was not to happen again in future wars. Egypt retained the Gaza Strip, and Jordan’s King Abdullah the West Bank of the river Jordan, which he annexed to his kingdom in 1950. For all practical purposes Palestine was partitioned; not, however, as the UN had envisaged, between Jews and Arab-Palestinians, but rather between the Israelis and the Arab states which had, apparently, invaded the land in support of the Palestinians. These last were the big losers in this war, for they had become refugees in camps in Gaza, the West Bank, and other neighbouring Arab states.

When the war ended, Israelis and Arab representatives of the invading armies met on the island of Rhodes where, as Moshe Dayan of the Israeli delegation later recalled, ‘Good food, spring weather, enchanting scenery . . . hundreds of butterflies of all sizes and colours’ lent a ‘fairy tale air’ to the tough negotiations on achieving armistice agreements between the opposing parties.<sup>29</sup> The talks were tough because there was no clear victor in

this war. Israel had withheld the Arab invasion and beaten Lebanon and Egypt, but both Syria and Jordan had done well. The Syrian army had managed to cross the international border – agreed between France and Britain in 1923 – and occupy land which had been allotted by the UN to the Jewish state. The Arab Legion, as has been shown, seized the West Bank and kept East Jerusalem. Thus in contrast, for instance, to the situation after the First World War, where the victors were able to impose ‘peace’ on Germany at Versailles, here there had been no clear winner, and reaching an agreement had to involve give-and-take between the parties.

Nonetheless, on 24 February 1949, Egypt was the first to sign an armistice agreement with Israel, and on 23 March 1949, after Israel agreed to pull out of fourteen Lebanese villages it had occupied during the last stage of the war, Lebanon signed on the dotted line. On 3 April 1949, after four weeks of negotiations, Israel and Transjordan signed an agreement. Negotiations between Israel and Syria ended when, under international pressure, Syria was forced to agree to withdraw its forces from the land it had occupied west of the international border, which now became a demilitarized zone; Israeli and Syrian representatives signed on 20 July 1949. Iraq, however, refused to sign an armistice agreement with Israel, and its forces on the West Bank were replaced by those of the Transjordan Arab Legion, with some of the land under Iraqi occupation being transferred to Israeli hands.

The armistice agreements were seen as temporary settlements which would later be replaced by permanent peace agreements. But the conflict between Israel and the Arabs and Palestinians was bound to continue, for the great problem which had caused the war in the first place – the struggle between Jews and Arab Palestinians for mastery of the land – was still unresolved at the war’s end. Worse still, the war had created a particular problem that was to fester and provoke unrest for more than fifty years: the Palestinian refugees.



Map 2 Israel 1949: armistice lines

## THE IMPACT OF WAR ON THE ISRAELIS

'The War of Independence' or 'The War of Liberation', as the Israelis refer to the 1947-9 war, was perceived by them as a life-or-death struggle. But with the benefit of hindsight we can state that if any danger of extinction did exist – when the country's fate was still in the balance – it was only during the very short period between 15 May 1948, the day the regular Arab armies invaded, and 11 June, the day the first UN truce came into effect. This three-week period was the time when there was still a clear Arab superiority in weaponry and firepower – though as we have shown, not in manpower – and when it was also unclear how the freshly recruited Israeli soldiers, many of whom were newly arrived immigrants, would perform. However, once the Israeli forces had checked the Arab onslaught, absorbed new weapons, increased their own weapons production, and trained immigrants and volunteers, the worst was over and Israeli superiority in manpower and weapons combined with short internal lines of communication and high motivation to defeat the Arabs.

That said, this bloodiest of all Israel's wars was to have a most profound and longstanding impact on the psyche of the people of Israel. A particularly significant effect of the war on the collective spirit of the Israelis concerned the fact that it was fought only a short time after the terrible tragedy that had befallen the Jewish people in Europe, with the massacre of 5.4 million of them at the hands of the Nazis.<sup>30</sup> Moreover, in sharp contrast to most of Israel's future wars, the majority of the Israeli population was effectively on the front-line, facing war on its doorstep and exposed to bombardment by enemy aeroplanes; Tel Aviv was bombed fifteen times, with several hundred civilian casualties.

The war cost Israel 5,682 dead, 20 per cent of them civilians and about 8 per cent women. This amounts to about 1 per cent of the total Jewish population in Palestine-Israel, and is indeed a

high ratio if compared, for example, to the number of casualties in the First World War, where France lost 34 per thousand, Germany 30 per thousand, Austro-Hungary 10 per thousand, Britain and Italy 16 per thousand, and Russia 11 per thousand. Taking into consideration that the First World War was nearly three and a half times as long as the 1948 war – 51 months compared with fifteen – then it can be said that the ratio of Israeli dead compared with the population was more than Germany's and closer to France's. There were 1,260 women widowed, 2,290 children orphaned and 3,000 soldiers wounded, of whom as many as 360 became mentally ill, which is as high as Britain during the First World War.

The loss of so many young men – the fittest of their society – was perhaps the main feature of this war, but ironically, it had very little long-term effect on the growth of the Israeli population. A war like this, in which many perish, often causes a reduction in the number of marriages and inevitably leads to a sharp dip in the birth rate. But in Israel, the destruction of an entire generation did not lead to what had happened in Europe after the First World War – a 'surplus of women', or rather a 'deficit of men'. The reason for the absence of this problem after the 1948 war was that the death of so many men was compensated for by the waves of new immigrants arriving in Israel, which in 1948 amounted to 118,000, in 1949 to 239,000 and in 1950–1 to 343,000. In crude terms, for every Israeli killed, several more Jews had come. And thus although in 1948, the most hard-fought year of the war, the number of marriages went down to 10.85 per thousand – compared with 12.98 per thousand in 1947 – it went up (and again in spite of the sheer number of young men who died) in 1949 to 13.40 per thousand (even higher than in 1947!), and up again to 14.54 per thousand in 1950. The annual birth rate, which between 1947 and 1948 went down from 30.55 per thousand to 26.31 per thousand, had risen in 1949 to 29.95 per thousand and went up further in

1950. The young Israeli nation demonstrated its resilience, and a closer look shows that in all walks of life there had been little change, even during the most intensive months of the war. The number of deaths in the Jewish population (excluding deaths resulting directly from the war) was stable: 6.36 per thousand in 1946; 6.58 per thousand in 1947; 6.46 per thousand in 1948; this shows that in spite of the dreadful war the standards of medical care remained intact. Jerusalem was under siege, but there was no hunger, and social life continued to function more or less normally.

Nevertheless, the war provided succeeding generations of Israelis with plenty of material for mythology and legend with which to nourish their future. But not all that was told was strictly true. The Israeli soldier emerging from this war was portrayed as a fighter always playing a fair game – a sort of an English gentleman who even in the heat of the battle never stabs his enemy in the back. In reality, however, the Israeli soldiers, contrary to the myth, had behaved no differently from many other armies – they looted, expelled, massacred and raped. In Acre a group of Israeli soldiers raped an Arab woman, killed her father and injured her mother; and this, as we learn from the war diary of Prime Minister Ben Gurion, was not an isolated case.<sup>31</sup>

The experience of the war stamped a sense of unity and common destiny on the psychic fibre of the Israelis, who had emerged from it with a new national consciousness, a unity of purpose overriding party conflict and internal feuds. What further cemented unity and emphasized the common destiny of the people of Israel was the huge effort which had followed the war to commemorate those who had died. The Ministry of Defence assembled details of those who perished and produced 4,520 obituaries, collected in a book entitled *Yizkor* ('Remembrance'). Another official memorial was *Gevilai Esh*, which included 455 items: poetry and stories written by those who had died. It was after this war that the term *Mishpachat Ha'schol*, meaning 'The



Family of Breavement', was coined to emphasize that the entire nation was one family grieving its dead. The number of memorials erected to commemorate the dead had reached 1,321 by the mid-1950s; at least one out of every three dead soldiers was individually commemorated.

Gunther Rothenberg, in *The Anatomy of the Israeli Army*, summarizes the story of the 1948 war of independence in a fine passage: 'Both the realization that his life and that of his family literally were at stake . . . fuelled by the pronouncements of Arab politicians about a "war of extermination" stiffened the will [of Israelis] to fight'.<sup>32</sup> And this will to fight was further strengthened by the dominant presence of the Holocaust generation. For as Bernard Lewis correctly observed in *Semites and Anti-Semites*:

For most Jews, that genocide was the most shattering event in their history . . . the central experience of their personal lives, and their thoughts and actions are dominated by the knowledge that what has happened once can happen again, and by the determination that it must not.<sup>33</sup>

Indeed, feeling that they were with their backs to the wall facing enemies determined to destroy them, and with the experiences of the Holocaust still fresh in mind, Israelis in the coming years would continue – as they had done during the first war with the Arabs – to rally behind the flag and its leadership, to take up arms when asked, and to fight with determination and desperation, believing themselves to be fighting for their very survival.

# 2

---

## A NATION-IN-ARMS

1949–67

In the days, months and years that followed the 1948 War of Independence, the Israeli government had to face two supreme tasks. The first was to absorb the tide of destitute, physically and mentally handicapped Jewish immigrants, who poured copiously into the country following the British departure and Ben Gurion's announcement that the 1939 White Paper and all immigration laws based upon it were null and void. Ben Gurion's statement was reinforced by the 'Law of Return' which was passed by the Knesset on 5 July 1950 and said, among other statements, that: 'Every Jew has the right to immigrate to the country'. This became one of the most important laws ever passed by the Israeli parliament, for it opened the gates of Israel and enabled every Jew to come and join in the attempt to build a nation and a state and to become automatically one of its citizens.

During the first seven and a half months of the state's existence, 101,819 Jewish immigrants arrived, and they were added to in 1949 by 239,076 new arrivals, in 1950 by 170,597, in 1951 by 172,245 and between 1952 and 1955 by 92,204 Jews; in addition there were 88,338 Jewish births during these last four years. Entire Jewish communities had left their homes and countries of origin and immigrated to Israel. But rather than being a voluntary step, it was often one of desperation, for the truth is that the majority of these Jews, especially those living in Middle Eastern countries, were pushed out of their native countries by outraged Arabs humiliated by the victory of the Jews in 1948, rather than being attracted by the newly established Jewish state. Thus the entire Yemenite Jewry, a total of 49,000, was transferred to Israel in 'Operation Magic Carpet' in 1949, and the majority of Iraqi Jewry, a total of 100,000, were airlifted to Israel in 'Operation Ezra and Nehemiah' between May 1950 and December 1951. The Jews of Iraq formed a unique case, for they were harassed not only by the Iraqi authorities but also by Israeli agents who, in April 1950, pretending to be anti-Jewish Iraqis, threw hand grenades at the Dar al Bayda coffee house where Jews used to meet, then repeated the same exercise at the US Information Centre where young Jews often came to read, and in March 1951 struck again just outside the Masuda Shemtov synagogue. This unusual method of frightening away the Jews so that they would leave Iraq and immigrate to Israel seemed justified at the time, given that the *raison d'être* of a Jewish state and one of its paramount goals was to gather the Jews from all over the world and bring them to *Eretz Yisrael*. Survivors of the European Holocaust also arrived in Israel after being held in internment camps in Cyprus, because the British, as long as they were still in Palestine, would not grant them entry visas. Others had arrived from Eastern Europe, where, unlike Western Europe, the post-Nazi era did not bring a decline in anti-Semitism through compassion for the victims, but rather an increase

directed principally against those Jews seeking to return to their homes. By 1951, 100,000 Jews from Poland and 120,000 from Romania had settled in Israel in addition to the Jewish communities of Bulgaria (37,444 had arrived between 1948 and 1955), Czechoslovakia (18,297 had arrived between 1948 and 1955), Yugoslavia, and the greater part of Turkish Jewry.

Yet these Jews, coming from the four corners of the world, had little in common – their diets were different, their cultures unique, and they used different languages, one group often unable to communicate with the other. At the first census in 1949 Jews listed more than twenty different European and Asiatic languages as their media of speech. Together they formed a very fragmented community, and while absorbing and providing them with the barest necessities of life – food, housing, clothing – was the government's main task, transforming them from individuals and close-knit communities into a cohesive Israeli society was also of paramount importance.

The other task of the Israeli government was to reorganize the Israeli military and transform it into an efficient, professional body capable of defending the fledgling state. In fact, it was necessary to build it from scratch, for when hostilities ended most of the forces that had won the 1948 war, about 100,000 troops, were demobilized and the armed forces had now effectively ceased to exist. Worse still, weapons and ammunition were in short supply, the remaining forces were under-equipped and military standards were appalling. Rebuilding and equipping the IDF was an urgent task, and there was no time to indulge in leisurely preparations for war because a renewal of hostilities with the Arabs seemed inevitable. The General Staff – led in the postwar period by Chief of Staff Yigael Yadin – had predicted that Israel 'should expect another war with the Arabs', and Premier and Defence Minister Ben Gurion agreed with this assessment, recording in his diary: 'The Arab states were beaten by us. Could they forget that? 700,000 [Jewish] men had beaten

30 million [Arabs]. . . . Could they forget such a humiliation?'<sup>1</sup> In the Foreign Ministry a file named 'The renewal of war' was opened as early as July 1949.

These two tasks – absorbing and transforming the people of Israel from individuals into a cohesive society, and building a new army – were interconnected. A healthy, cohesive society was needed in order to provide the resources – both human and material – to build a highly motivated armed force capable of winning future wars, and armed forces, in turn, seemed at the time to be the best instrument to turn a fragmented community into a nation and society. 'Even the English nation', Ben Gurion observed, '[was no more than] tribes [which were] different from each other. . . . And only after hundreds years of evolution did they become one nation . . . we [Israelis] do not have hundreds of years and without this instrument – the army – we will not become a nation'.<sup>2</sup> What Ben Gurion had in mind was an army which should be a school for society, namely an organization which would be 'not only the fortress of our security', as he put it, 'but also [serve as] an educational force for national unity' where Jews from different cultures would mix together and become 'friends and partners with the native born'.<sup>3</sup>

## BUILDING AN ARMY – CREATING A MELTING POT

The civilian is a soldier on eleven months' annual leave.

(Chief of Staff Yigael Yadin)

Ben Gurion's notion of an army which was an instrument to build a nation and cement the fragmented Israeli society can best be illustrated if the army is seen as a bottleneck through which almost all Israeli citizens, including women, must pass during a compulsory military service. While undergoing this experience Israelis live together, learn to know each other and about each other, communicate in the same language – obviously Hebrew –

and are all indoctrinated with the common and ultimate goal of defending their homeland, Israel, from enemies bent on destroying it. Furthermore, the 'bottleneck experience' is reinforced when Israelis, after experiencing compulsory military service, continue to see and meet each other when they are called every year for routine security duties, training and wars. For even after becoming civilians, the Israelis, as Chief of Staff Yadin once put it, remain 'soldiers on eleven months' annual leave'. Such a life experience – it has been calculated that almost every Israeli male devotes at least six full years of his life to military service and almost every woman between one and two full years – inevitably creates a strong bond between society and the military to the point where the society is the army and the army is a mirror of society, or as it is often put: 'the IDF is the people of Israel in uniform'.

In attempting to create a military system based on almost the entire Israeli society, Ben Gurion opted for the Swiss model. In this, a small nucleus of regular and conscripted personnel trains, maintains depots and command structures, and carries out routine security duties. This nucleus is also available in the event of an emergency, and is the body responsible for holding the ground and absorbing a potential surprise attack by the enemy until the main bulk of the armed forces which consists of reservists, namely civilians who were previously trained as conscripts, takes over. The advantage of this system which so attracted Ben Gurion is that it both provides for an adequate defence of the state in times of war, and allows an ordinary functioning of the economy in peacetime.

The new IDF, which was reorganized after the 1948 war and which was modelled closely on the Swiss military system, was established with three tiers. The first tier, the standing army, contains 30 per cent of the total available manpower and is composed of conscripts subject to universal and compulsory military service. During this period of service, conscripts are

trained and specialize in specific areas: armour, artillery, air force, navy, and so on. In times of war, this component is given, as in the Swiss system, the mission of absorbing an enemy's first strike and if necessary of being the first to move into enemy territory. The second tier of the new IDF is the reserve body. Composed of civilians who have completed their period of compulsory service, the reserves provide the quantitative component of the IDF, which reverses the numerical advantage of the Arab troops in favour of the Israelis and bridges the gap between peacetime and wartime manpower requirements. In fact, the main feature and also the object of this new military system is the production of a huge reserve with which to expand the active army in war. The third tier of the military system is the professional component composed of career personnel, most of whom serve in the air force and the navy. It was clear from the start, that if this system, which is based overwhelmingly on civilian reserves, was to function properly, it would have to rely heavily on a first-rate intelligence service which was capable of providing an alert early enough for reserves to be called up, mobilized and join the regulars; a big investment was therefore put into creating an effective army intelligence service. Chief of Staff Yadin who, under the close supervision of Ben Gurion, had carried out the task of building the new IDF, often compared it to an iceberg with only its tip, namely its regular and the professional components, visible, while the iceberg itself, namely the reserve component, based on almost the entire society, was hidden.

To enable the government to mobilize the entire society – for this was the implication of having a military system based on civilian reserves as the main component of the wartime order of battle – in June 1949 the Knesset passed 'Chok Sherut Bitachon Leumi'. Under the provisions of this law, which has been amended throughout the years but basically remains unchanged, men and women who were found physically and mentally fit

were liable to service at the age of eighteen; the period of service to be modified in accordance with defence requirements. The law also stipulated that upon terminating a period of compulsory service the authorities could call men and women to serve in the reserve force, either to be trained in new methods or to participate in military actions. The law also allowed a semi-military framework called *Gadna* ('youth brigades') to prepare boys and girls of 14–18 to become soldiers. Thus by law almost the whole of Israeli society between the ages of fourteen and fifty-five was enlisted.

There were, however, a few exemptions. The law stipulated that Arab citizens living in Israel – meaning those who had not left during the 1948 war and were living under Israeli military rule until after the 1967 Six Day War – should be exempted. The reason for that was that the makers of the law felt they had to keep guns away from a potential fifth column, and also to absolve the Arabs of Israel from a dual loyalty to the Jewish state and to their fellow Arabs. That said, Christians and Bedouin were allowed to volunteer, and indeed many of them chose to serve in the IDF. Responding to political pressure from orthodox religious parties and a demand to replenish the pool of Torah scholars after the Holocaust, Ben Gurion also agreed to exempt 400 top students of religious institutions (called *Yeshivot*). In addition, girls of orthodox background were allowed to sign a declaration stating that military service was incompatible with their upbringing.

To the Knesset, which had voted overwhelmingly for this law, Ben Gurion explained that it aimed 'to prepare the entire people for defence; to give the youth – Israeli born and immigrant – pioneering and military training, to maintain a permanently mobilized force adequate to withstand a surprise attack and hold out until the reserves were mobilized'.



## ARMING THE IDF AND PERFECTING THE SYSTEM

Equipping the new IDF, though crucial, was no easy task given the stress and burden caused by the need to absorb the massive influx of immigrants. But then, as we have already noted, a 'second round' with the Arab world seemed certain, and the Israeli government felt obliged to make its first priority the buying of arms and equipping the IDF. Thus, in the period between March 1949 and December 1951, it procured some 216 planes, 21 tanks, 46 naval vessels, 19 armoured vehicles, 102 half tracks, 591 cannons, 23 torpedo boats, 403 heavy machine guns, 11 medium machine guns, 5,135 rifles, 7 sub-automatic rifles and 3,453 pistols. At the beginning of 1952 the IDF had a total of 420 planes, 61 tanks, 85 naval vessels, 221 half tracks, 19 armoured vehicles, 1,007 canons, 24 heavy mortars, 23 torpedo boats, 561 heavy machine guns, 1,428 medium machine guns, 6,039 automatic rifles, 57,526 rifles, 530 sub-automatic rifles and 5,208 pistols. This might appear to be an unimpressive arsenal, but compared with the tiny stockpile of arms the Israelis had only four years earlier, it was indeed a most impressive amount of weapons to have been assembled within a relatively short period of time.

As with arms, so it was with training – expensive but essential. Mobilization in future wars, so the Israeli planners had stipulated, would have to be very different from the way it was carried out during the 1948 war, where mobilization was gradual and months had passed before the army reached full strength. In future wars Israeli society would have to mobilize much more efficiently – reserves moving quickly to the battle fronts and the rapid transference of cars, vehicles and other resources from the citizenry to the IDF. Those segments of society which did not join the front-line fighting force, mostly women, the young and the old, were to flock into factories, offices and voluntary services, to hospitals and to schools in

order to take the place of men so that mobilization would not wreck the economy.

Military manoeuvres and training got under way immediately after the 1948 war, and this was regularly reported in the papers – which were tightly controlled by the state – presumably in order to induce a sense of belonging among Israelis and also to make a show of strength and deter potential adversaries. The IDF magazine *Ba'machane*, reported, on 17 October 1949, that 'When the men were called up to take part in the summer military manoeuvres . . . they were not the only ones who were called to the flag. Recruitment calls were also issued for animals'. It was, in other words, almost the entire society which was called to serve – even animals.

In spite of the hardships and austerity and the fact that the economy was in a desperate condition, Chief of Staff Yadin was able to hold three large-scale manoeuvres involving more than 100,000 reserves. The first major exercise, which was called 'Manoeuvre A', took place in 1950 and was aimed at testing the call-up system by using two types of calls up – 'silent calls' in which officers called up reserves by telephoning them; and an open mobilization where reserves were summoned to join their units by codes broadcast over the radio. In 1951 two other extensive exercises, 'Manoeuvre B' and 'Manoeuvre C', took place, in which reserve formations were physically deployed and took up positions to test the system under two different scenarios: one in which Israel had suffered a surprise attack, and another in which Israel had itself launched a pre-emptive strike. For although the Israeli doctrine of warfare based on pre-emptive strike and the transfer of war into enemy soil was developed only after the 1956 Sinai campaign, in the early 1950s the advantages of this method for a small state like Israel were already becoming clear.

The manoeuvres had proved beyond any doubt that the new IDF functioned properly and its reserve component – that is, the

society as a whole – had cooperated fully. This was crucial, given that for such a system to function properly – with men leaving their jobs and other obligations and also transferring their private cars to the army – full public cooperation was essential.

## A SENSE OF INSECURITY AND PUBLIC COOPERATION

After the 1948 war the government of Israel could count on the public to rally behind it and cooperate fully, both in paying high taxes for defence and also in devoting much time to carrying out routine military duties. What ensured the public's full cooperation was its strong sense of insecurity, caused partly by Arab actions, which seemed to be aimed at harming Israel, and partly by the tendency of the Israeli leadership to exaggerate the external danger posed by the Arabs.

Palestinian infiltration, for example, had strongly affected the public mood. Palestinians, now living as refugees in camps in the Gaza Strip, Jordan, Syria and Lebanon, would enter Israel through its penetrable borders. These incursions, especially in the early 1950s, were not, however, aimed at re-occupying the land these people had lost a few years earlier, but rather at returning to villages and homes in order to collect possessions and crops in abandoned fields, and also to steal from Israeli farms. In fact, much of this non-violent Palestinian infiltration was encouraged by Israel's policy of repatriation, which extended rights to close family members separated by the war to return home. Since, in order for a person to be eligible for this scheme, there had to be some member of their family remaining in the country, a method was developed by which Palestinian women and children infiltrated Israel and thereafter applied for permission for members of their families to join them. IDF figures show that in 1952, 16,000 cases of Palestinian infiltration

occurred; in 1953 there were 7,018 cases; in 1954, 4,638; in 1955, 4,351; and during the first months of 1956, 2,786 cases. Israel's policy was determined and ruthless – its armed forces shot the infiltrators. This policy was aimed at deterring Palestinians from attempting to return to their homes, thus preventing a trickle of return turning into a flood which would then endanger the Jewish character of Israel.

But not all Palestinian infiltration was non-violent, and there were infiltrators who sought to carry out acts of sabotage and kill Israelis. IDF figures show that in 1950, 19 Israelis were killed and 31 were injured by Arab marauders. In 1951 the figures were 48 and 49 respectively; in 1952, 42 and 56; in 1953, 44 and 66. Palestinian violent actions had gathered momentum from April 1955, when groups of fedayeen were established in the Gaza strip under Egyptian intelligence supervision, with the aim of striking at Israel. All in all, between 1949 and 1956 Israel lost 486 lives, including 264 civilians; and 1,057 were injured, including 477 civilians.

In absolute terms this was surely not a heavy toll for a country whose population exceeded 1.5 million, but as Avner Yaniv rightly observed in *Deterrence without the Bomb*:

The damage was perceived as extensive ... in terms of people's state of mind. Incidents leading to death and injury of Israelis by Arabs who had crossed over from the neighbouring countries created a pervasive sense of insecurity. People became afraid to travel at night – even, in certain areas, in broad daylight.<sup>4</sup>

Israeli leaders often exaggerated the danger of Arab infiltration, as did, for example, minister Yitzhak Ben Aharon when declaring in the Knesset that Arab infiltration 'Endangers our very existence'. Inevitably, such statements increased rather than eased the public's sense of insecurity, and as Sir John Bagot

Glubb, the British commander of the Arab Legion, the army of the state of Transjordan, correctly observed:

One of the most dangerous aspects of this unrestrained [Israeli] propaganda was the effect which it seemed to be having on the Israeli public. They [the Israeli government] complained that the inhabitants of their frontier colonies could not sleep at night. This is scarcely to be wondered at, if they read the Israeli Press, which daily described the most bloody (but fortunately often fictitious) battles [between Israeli forces and the infiltrators].<sup>5</sup>

Was the Israeli government exaggerating the external danger in order to rally its people behind it? This is hard to answer and we have not a scrap of evidence to show that this was indeed the case, but such an unofficial Israeli policy of frightening its own people so that they would rally behind the flag should not be ruled out automatically.

To counter Palestinian violence, the Israelis devised a policy which became known as the 'doctrine of retaliatory action'. One of the features of this policy was to hit hard in response to even a small provocation, and also to strike at the countries from which the perpetrators had come so as to put pressure on hosting Arab governments to prevent incursions of Palestinian fighters into Israel. The killing, for instance, of an Israeli mother and her two young children in Yahud in 1953, led to a massive Israeli retaliatory action in Kibia which resulted in the deaths of sixty-nine Arab civilians. The killing of an Israeli cyclist near Rehovot led to an equally massive Israeli retaliatory action against the fedayeen in Gaza on 28 February 1955, in which thirty-eight Egyptian soldiers were killed and thirty-two wounded.<sup>6</sup> An Egyptian attempt to demolish Israeli water devices near the border with Gaza led to Israeli retaliation against the Khan Yunis police fort on 31 August 1955, in which seventy-two Egyptians were killed

and fifty-eight wounded. When Syrians fired at Israeli fishermen on the Sea of Galilee, the Israelis retaliated on 11 December 1955, killing fifty-four Syrians, wounding nine and capturing thirty.<sup>7</sup>

Israel's retaliatory doctrine neither curbed infiltration nor eased public insecurity. In fact, it achieved precisely the opposite effect for, by reacting massively and disproportionately to even minor Palestinian provocations, the Israeli leadership instilled in the public a mistaken impression that a big and continuous war was being waged between Israeli troops and the fedayeen.

Another reason for a growing sense of insecurity among Israelis was what seemed to be an Arab intention to strike at and destroy Israel. While true at times, this has not always reflected reality. In fact in the early 1950s, Arab leaders were less concerned with their struggle with Israel than was reported at the time. In Egypt, for example, the Free Officers who overthrew King Farouk in July 1952 did not even mention Israel in their manifesto, which dealt only with social reforms. Nevertheless in the mid-1950s, policies taken by Egypt which had little to do with Israel were often seen by the Israelis as aimed at harming them. On 27 September 1955, for example, Egypt's President Nasser concluded his arms deal with Czechoslovakia under which Egypt was to receive huge amounts of weapons including tanks, field guns, anti-aircraft guns, jet bombers and even 120 Mig-15 fighters. At first this failed to make an impression on the Israelis, and Prime Minister Moshe Sharett did not even bother mentioning it in his personal diary, where he would record almost every event. It took Sharett no less than three days to convene a special session of the government to discuss the matter.

But soon this arms deal was causing considerable panic, with every paper in Israel running headlines such as 'A time of danger, a time of opportunity' and 'Anything could now happen along Israel's borders'. In *Ma'ariv*, 2 October 1955, Azriel

Carlibach, a senior journalist, published an editorial warning of Egyptian aggression. *Davar*, the paper controlled by the Labour movement, declared in its 2 October editorial that 'The arms were purchased solely for planned aggression against Israel. . . . The Egyptian ruler and the other Arab rulers believe it their right to foreclose Israel's possibility of self-defence, just as they deny the very existence of our state'. In the Knesset around this time Ben Gurion, now a defence minister under Sharett, announced that

The rulers of Egypt seem to have concluded that it is easier to win victories on the foreign policy front than to reform the unfortunate and shameful domestic situation, and in order to gain Arab hegemony the tyrants of Egypt have apparently decided that the easier and cheapest way is by attacking Israel.

On 10 October, Ya'acov Meridor of Herut declared that the Czech arms deal 'put into question the future of our nation here, our very existence and well-being'. Prime Minister Sharett announced from the podium of the Knesset: 'From here in this house, in this our capital, we call on the citizens of Israel, to the Jewish people throughout the Diaspora, and to the entire world for weapons for Israel', and elsewhere he said 'We [Israelis] must now pull together to mobilize all our capabilities which may be limited but are not insignificant . . . to take a stand and defend the ramparts'. The Knesset declared its concern about the large quantities of weapons supplied to Egypt which 'will be directed by Israel's enemies against her. . . . The Knesset charges the government with mobilizing the people and the state against the dangers'.

The view that Nasser meant to attack Israel at that time was, in my judgement, mistaken. Nasser had no precise plans of aggression; at best he had an intention of doing so, which he held in common with most Arabs. And while such an arsenal in the hands of an Arab state undoubtedly presented a potential threat

to Israel, we now know – and it is likely that the Israeli leaders knew at the time – that Nasser’s arms deal was more a protest against the Baghdad Pact than against Israel. This pact, of 24 February 1955, of mutual cooperation between Iraq and Turkey, in which Britain and Iran joined and the US supported with arms and money, was part of American Secretary of State John Foster Dulles’ policy of containing Soviet expansion by clear contractual deterrents that would prevent Soviet penetration of the Middle East. Nasser, who saw himself as the leader of the Arab world, regarded the pact as an attempt to divide the Arabs. Hence, as the Israeli diplomat Abba Eban observed, the acquisition of weapons was ‘above all Nasser’s response to the Baghdad Pact’, and aggression against Israel was ‘at most, a subsidiary motive’.<sup>8</sup>

Was the Israeli government exaggerating the danger of weapons in Nasser’s hands in order to rally its people behind it? This is hard to answer. It is probable that it was assumed by Israeli leaders that almost any jet could take off and bomb towns in Israel, and that all these weapons could be used against Israeli targets, and that they would be used. But it also might well be that in addition to this, Israeli leaders assumed that exaggerating the external danger was not a bad idea after all, for it would rally the nation behind it. Indeed, on the day of the Knesset debate on the Egypt–Czechoslovakia deal, a young boy came to the Ministry of Defence offices in Tel Aviv asking to see the Minister. When he was directed to one of the clerks, the boy gave him a handful of small coins that he had been saving for his *Bar Mitzvah*, to buy defensive weapons for Israel; the next day an old woman appeared offering her own contribution of a gold bangle. Former Chief of Staff Yadin added to the sense of urgency when he called on Israeli parents to ‘buy an iron cloth for the defence of your children’. Soon, prices of weaponry systems were published in the daily papers and the public was invited to ‘buy’ them for the IDF. The Israeli Teacher Association donated money



to 'buy' a jet plane and a tank, while Haifa Council 'bought' a torpedo boat for the navy. Ramat-Gan Council 'bought' a transport plane and 100 parachutes and the Discount Bank of Israel collected money to 'buy' a tank, as did representatives of the public in the town of Ramleh, who called the tank they had 'purchased' 'Ramleh I'. And with the public fully cooperating, the government moved to consolidate the donations by establishing the 'Voluntary Defence Fund' into which old and young poured money. Calls on the public to help in order to face the Egyptian threat had gathered momentum with Prime Minister Sharett's announcement that the decisive military advantage which would soon be held by a nation intent on laying Israel to waste, endangered the state and each and every Israeli citizen. He then declared that 'it is time to work for the defence of Israel'. Playing the Holocaust card, the leadership went so far as to announce that the lesson of Jewish history, reinforced by the experience of the Holocaust, was simple – a Jewish state must be able to protect itself. Defence Minister Ben Gurion told the public that President Nasser's aim was to strike at Israel because he had been humiliated in 1948, and Chief of Staff Moshe Dayan called the Egyptian leader 'a military dictator'. In ten days, IL5 million had been collected to buy arms for the IDF.

Mordechai Bar On, an intelligent and well informed observer, who served as Moshe Dayan's head of bureau, wrote in a fine passage:

For most Israelis, the conflict shaped since the War of Independence had limited their perspective. Their images had crystallized during the hostilities of 1948; if this was how one began reckoning history then the conflict in the mid-1950s could only be seen as one between a defensive Israel, protecting its very existence and the belligerent Arabs, intent on Israel's destruction. This view provided Israel's security establishment with two important assets: a wide public consensus

on security issues and total civilian willingness to fight in the wars.

Indeed, a wide public consensus on security enabled the Israeli leadership to channel substantial sums of money into defence and spend increasing proportions of the national income on armaments, without raising any significant opposition from taxpayers. In 1950 the defence budget amounted to \$87.6 million; in 1951 it was \$151.5 million; in 1952 it was \$75.5 million; and in 1953 the figure was \$68.8 million. Defence expenditure as a percentage of government expenditure grew dramatically from 23.0 per cent in 1952 to 34.9 per cent in 1956. That the government could spend so much on arms, while at the same time demanding that the public ‘tighten its belt’ and live an almost Spartan life, is a clear indication that it had strong public support. Furthermore, as Bar On correctly observed, given the Israeli sense of insecurity, the government could be sure that if called to the flag, Israelis would cooperate fully and take up arms to defend themselves. Indeed, this proved to be the case in the autumn of 1956.

## A MAJOR TEST

The ‘Kadesh War’ – Kadesh after the desert post where the Israelites had rested on their way to the promised land – or as it is better known, the ‘Sinai Campaign’, was the largest military operation undertaken by the IDF since the 1948 war. It was sparked by President Nasser’s announcement on 26 July 1956 that his government had decided to nationalize the Suez Canal Company. Nasser offered to compensate the company’s shareholders, mainly France and Britain, and said he would use the income from the canal to build the Aswan Dam, at an estimated cost of \$1.3 billion, a project that Egypt needed for irrigation and for power. Nasser’s announcement came in response to

American Secretary of State John Foster Dulles' announcement, made on 19 July, that no American aid for the building of the Dam would be forthcoming, and that American and British participation in financing the High Dam of Aswan through the World Bank was not 'feasible in present circumstances'. This meant that Washington had reversed its previous pledge to support the project. It had done so, among other reasons, because of Nasser's growing links with the Soviet Union and his fierce campaign against the Baghdad Pact.

Nasser's nationalization of the Suez Canal drew together two previous colonial powers – France and Britain – who resented the idea that with Nasser's nationalization of the Suez Canal Company they – who had acquired a concession to operate the Suez Canal for ninety-nine years after its opening, that is until 1968 – would be dependent for their major supplies, especially of oil, not on an international waterway over which they had direct control, but on Nasser's goodwill. In London and Paris, Nasser's action was seen as a major threat to their far-flung maritime economic interests east of Suez.

Soon after Nasser's announcement, France and Britain began considering the use of force to regain control of the Suez Canal. Israel – odd as it seems – was also invited to join the anti-Nasser coalition, and saw in the possibility of war against Egypt an opportunity to achieve its own aims, which were not at all, however, connected with the Suez Canal, but rather with the Straits of Tiran.

The Straits of Tiran were Israel's primary route to East Africa and Asia, but for several years had been blocked by Egyptian batteries deployed at Sharm el-Sheikh. Troubles had started in 1953 when Egypt had detained, for the first time, a Danish cargo ship en route to the Israeli port of Eilat. In September 1953 the Egyptians treated a Greek vessel in the same way, and on 1 January 1954 they opened fire on a small Italian cargo vessel en route to Eilat. For the Israelis, interference with freedom of

navigation through the Straits posed not only an economic but also a political danger. For the Israelis were haunted by the fear that the West, in its anxiety to lure Egypt into a pro-Western alliance, would force Israel to cede the Negev so as to facilitate territorial continuity between Egypt and the Fertile Crescent. Settling the Negev and keeping the port and town of Eilat bustling with activity might have prevented such demands, but for this to succeed Israel needed the Straits to remain open. On 6 May 1955, Ben Gurion had declared that blocking the Straits was for Israel a *casus belli*, and when the blockade continued he went so far as to threaten, in an interview given to the *New York Times* on 29 September 1955, that if Egypt failed to lift the blockade within a year, Israel would use force to open the Straits. And now, following Nasser's nationalization of the Suez Canal and the building of an anti-Nasser alliance which contemplated military action, Israel saw an opportunity to achieve this aim. Military action against Nasser could also be beneficial to Israel for two further reasons: first, it would enable Israel to strike at the Egyptian army before it assimilated the weapons Egypt had acquired through the September 1955 deal with Czechoslovakia. Second, it would enable Israel to hit and destroy the fedayeen bases in the Gaza Strip, which had been their jumping-off points for attacks on Israel.

A period of consultation and planning involving Israeli, French and British representatives had resulted in a simple military plan: Israel, as the eastern flank of a Franco-British attack, would provide a pretext for a French and British intervention by attacking Egypt towards the Suez Canal. On being appraised of this, the British and the French governments would make two appeals to the governments of Egypt and Israel. To Egypt: (a) halt all acts of war. (b) withdraw all troops ten miles from the Canal. (c) accept temporary occupation of key positions on the Canal by the Anglo-French forces to guarantee freedom of passage through the Suez canal. To Israel: (a) halt all acts of war

(b) withdraw all troops ten miles to the east of the Canal. It was obvious that Israel, which was party to this plan, would agree, though it was stipulated that Nasser might refuse to withdraw, in which case France and Britain would use force to take over the Suez Canal.

On 22 October, Prime Minister and Defence Minister Ben Gurion, accompanied by his two principal lieutenants, Chief of Staff Dayan and director of the defence ministry Shimon Peres, flew to Sèvres in France to finalize the joint military plan. On 25 October, Dayan recorded in his diary:

We can sum up the situation today as follows: 1. The prime minister and defence minister, David Ben Gurion, has given approval in principle to the campaign and its aims. 2. Our forces will go into action at dusk on 29 October 1956, and we must complete the capture of the Sinai Peninsula within seven to ten days. 3. The decision on the campaign and its planning are based on the assumption that British and French forces are about to take action against Egypt.<sup>9</sup>

To the Israeli cabinet, on 28 October, Ben Gurion presented Israel's aims as follows:

We are interested, first of all, in [opening] the Straits of Eilat [to Israeli shipping] and the Red Sea. Only through them can we secure direct contact with the nations of Asia and East Africa. . . . The main thing, to my mind, is freedom of navigation in the Straits of Eilat. As far as the Gaza Strip is concerned. . . . If I believed in miracles I would pray for it to be swallowed up in the sea. All the same, we must eradicate the fedayeen bases and secure peaceful lives for the inhabitants of border areas.<sup>10</sup>

The Israeli forces for the campaign, as detailed by Chief of Staff

Dayan, comprised an armoured brigade – the 7th, with two tank battalions; two mechanized armoured brigades – the 27th and 37th; a paratroop brigade – the 202nd, and six infantry brigades – the 1st, 4th, 9th, 10th, 11th and 12th. Except for the 7th and 202nd, all were reserve formations. Given that the majority of forces were reservists, this campaign was to be a major test for the new IDF. To maintain security, Dayan delayed mobilization for most units until the last moment, and the initial mobilization which had begun on 26 October was carried out by messengers. Two days later on 28 October, an open mobilization was ordered, and once the radio call-up was used, units rapidly filled up and moved to the front.

The attack on Egypt was launched at 4.59 p.m. on 29 October, with Israeli aircraft dropping ‘out of the blue’ 385 parachute troops of the 890th battalion at the Israeli end of the Mitla Pass, some 30 miles east of the Suez Canal. Simultaneously, the rest of the 202nd paratroop brigade, under the command of Ariel Sharon, had embarked on an overland advance of 190 miles across central Sinai towards Mitla to link up with its parachute battalion twenty-eight hours later.

The campaign was quickly and easily won by the Israelis, who had managed to occupy the entire Sinai Peninsula within 100 hours, and reach and open the Straits of Tiran to Israeli shipping by occupying Sharm el-Sheikh. Israel had destroyed the Egyptian forces in Sinai at a cost of 172 killed, 700 wounded and four prisoners of war. Egypt suffered thousands of deaths, great numbers of wounded and 5,581 prisoners of war. The IDF, and particularly its reserve component, seemed to have conclusively proved its efficacy. The scores of thousands of civilians, who in the years preceding the war had trained within the constraints that a reserve system involved, in particular the limiting of training time, did not seem to have affected adversely the IDF’s performance in battle. An army of civilians had proved itself capable of fighting a brief, intensive war. The logistical system, too, had

withstood the demanding conditions of such a war. Israeli forces elsewhere took advantage of the fog of battle to finish the uncompleted job of the 1948 war. As the head of Northern Command Yitzhak Rabin testified: 'exploiting the war with the Egyptians . . . I have solved one problem in the north [of Israel] . . . I have transferred about 2,000 Arabs, who were a major security problem . . . to the eastern side of the Jordan [river]'.<sup>11</sup>

The Sinai campaign proved that the panic caused in Israel by the Egyptian–Czech arms deal was premature; the Egyptians had failed to assimilate the weapons, and Israel had captured great quantities of them.

While this brief war was a major test for the armed forces as far as mobilization and fighting practices were concerned, it had little impact on Israeli society as a whole. This was because it was perceived as a 'campaign' by the Israelis, and was seen as not much different from the major large-scale retaliatory actions which had taken place against Egypt and Jordan in the period leading up to it. More importantly, the campaign was short, decisive and successful, and as the old proverb goes, 'nothing succeeds like success'.

After the storm came a strange calm. Israel withdrew from the territory it had occupied, including Sharm el-Sheikh, and, in general, the next decade or so was a period of relative peace and tranquillity, especially along Israel's border with Egypt. It was a period in which Israel had the time to devote to producing some order from the chaos of war and social upheaval. Israeli society after the Sinai campaign became much more cohesive and self-assured, and was able to concentrate on consolidating its position in world affairs and at home.

That said, the consciousness of a severe external threat to its very existence remained. Nasser, after what seemed to be a victory over France and Britain, became much more confident, and also felt growing resentment towards Israel for having attacked him. As a result, his anti-Israeli declarations became more pronounced than in the early 1950s, although, as we have said, he

avoided unrest on his border with Israel. On 4 October 1958 Nasser endorsed the anti-Semitic *Protocols of the Elders of Zion*, which was the spiritual basis of European and especially Nazi anti-Semitism, thus arousing the deepest fears of the Israelis, many of whom were Holocaust survivors. Five years later in 1963, Nasser joined Iraq's President Abdul Salam Arif in signing a communiqué proclaiming that 'The aim of the Arabs is the destruction of Israel'. On 11 July 1965, Nasser declared: 'The final account with Israel will be made within five years if we are patient. The Moslems waited seventy years until they expelled the Crusaders from Palestine'. With such threats and intimidating declarations, and with the warnings of Israeli politicians that such statements should be taken very seriously indeed, the Israeli public rallied behind its leadership and was willing to carry on the burden of paying high taxes so that there would be no cuts in the defence budget, to leave jobs and families to take up routine training, and to agree to serve for long periods. For as one observer put it:

Rightly or wrongly, most Israelis were convinced that the Arabs were bent on destroying their state and that they were fighting with their backs to the wall. For them there could be no retreat because there was no place to retreat to and in every war the individual soldier believed that he was fighting for the life of his family, his home, and his nation.<sup>12</sup>



# 3

---

## THE SIX BAD YEARS

1967–73

### A POWDER KEG

The outbreak of war in the spring of 1967 shocked Israelis to the core, for it came, to speak bluntly, as a bolt from the blue. And it is only because this war was so remarkably successful that no demand was ever made – as was to be the case after the 1973 war – to investigate the politico-military establishment, whose superficial optimism and complacency had led Israelis to believe that war was a remote and unlikely event. That the Israeli leadership was totally relaxed about the security situation in the period just before this war, is well illustrated in the following extract from a report written by Walt Rostow, National Security Adviser in Lyndon Johnson's administration, of his meeting with Israeli Ambassador Abraham Harman on 31 January 1967:

Israeli ambassador Harman came in yesterday . . . to share his observations on the mood in Israel. His theme was basically that Israel faces an economically difficult situation over the next three years or so . . . he said most Israeli leaders feel the long-term security situation is under control.<sup>1</sup>

The view in Israel in the first half of 1967 was that its most implacable foe, President Nasser of Egypt, was unlikely to embark on a full-scale war. This opinion rested upon a theory that proved to be utterly erroneous; it was that as long as *la crème de la crème* of Nasser's forces, eight brigades in all, was still involved in the civil war in Yemen, supporting the Republicans against the Royalists, he would not dare to attack Israel. Complementary to this assessment was the view that neither Syria nor Jordan would open fire without the active participation of Egypt, which not only had the most powerful army but which was also in a geographical position to impose on Israel its traditional nightmare – a war on more than one front. And because the Israeli theory that war was remote was based heavily on the continuing Egyptian presence in the Yemen, the eyes of its intelligence services were fixed on airfields in Yemen and Egypt to check whether Egyptian troops were being brought back home, for their return to Egypt would be a strong indication that the prospects of war were higher than before. But in the first half of 1967 the Egyptian elite forces were still bogged down in the Yemenite civil war – they would return to Egypt only after the 1967 war – and in Israel it seemed as if the relatively calm situation along the Israeli–Egyptian border would continue unabated.

In stark contrast with the relatively calm relations between Egypt and Israel, the latter's relations with Syria were volatile and, in the period up to the 1967 war, characterized by a series of mounting tensions and skirmishes. There were three bones of contention between Israel and Syria. The first of these was over water. Israel wished to divert water from Lake Kinneret (also

known as the Sea of Galilee) down south to the Negev desert where water was scarce. It was vital for Israel to develop the Negev, because this was its most unpopulated area, and it contained valuable resources such as uranium. Perhaps more important was the fact that a Negev which was dotted with Jewish settlements and factories would, so the Israelis hoped, put an end to the persistent calls on Israel to cede parts of the desert to the Arabs and allow Egypt to establish a land bridge with Jordan. But without water Israel could not develop the desert, and this is why she built a pipeline, partly open, called *Ha'movil Ha'artzi* to divert water from the north to the south. The Syrians, however, objected to this project – their aims, after all, were opposite to those of Israel – and as the water sources, mainly from the Hatzbani and Banyas rivers, were in their territory, they attempted to divert the water before it reached Israel. This in turn had led to exchanges of fire in which Israeli tanks and aeroplanes hit and destroyed Syrian tractors and other machinery assembled to divert the water. This happened in four major border clashes: 17 March 1965, 13 May 1965, 12 August 1965 and 17 July 1966. Israel did manage to transfer water to the Negev, but the water project was a constant source of tension between the two countries.

The second bone of contention between Israel and Syria, and a persistent source of trouble in the region, was the support which the Syrian regime was giving to Palestinian paramilitary groups to cross into Israel and terrorize its citizens. This often led to Israeli military retaliatory actions aimed at forcing Syria to curb incursions from her territory. But while the authorities in both Jordan and Lebanon had taken tough measures to curb such infiltrations from their own countries into Israel, the Syrian leadership had extended its support to the Palestinian paramilitary groups. This led Yitzhak Rabin – he had taken over as Israel's Chief of Staff in January 1964 – to state on 12 May 1967 that the retaliatory actions Israel had directed against Jordan and

Lebanon to force them to curb terrorist attacks on Israel, were not an effective measure as far as Syria was concerned because, as Rabin put it, 'In Syria . . . the authorities themselves activate the terrorists'. He went on: 'therefore, the aim of any [future Israeli military] action against Syria will be different from the actions which Israel has taken against Jordan and Lebanon'.<sup>2</sup> This statement – although given to the small and unimportant IDF Magazine *Ba'machane* – was regarded in Arab circles as an Israeli intent to harm Syria. As Nasser later put it: 'Israeli commanders (meaning Rabin) announced they would carry out military operations against Syria in order to occupy Damascus and overthrow the Syrian government'.<sup>3</sup> Although Premier and Defence Minister Levi Eshkol – he had taken over from Ben Gurion in June 1963 – criticized Rabin for issuing statements which increased tensions in the region, he had himself fuelled Arab anxiety by issuing similar declarations (Nasser: 'on the same day . . . Eshkol made a very threatening statement against Syria'). Eshkol's bizarre behaviour had little to do with Israeli–Arab relations, but rather with his own relationship with Chief of Staff Rabin and the attempts of each of them to outdo the other and impress upon the Israeli people that they were tough on the Arabs. Such declarations put President Nasser under strong pressure because of the defence pact between Egypt and Syria – signed on 4 November 1966 – which committed Egypt to helping Syria if it was attacked by Israel.

The third bone of contention between Israel and Syria was over control of the demilitarized zones (DMZs). These were three areas west of the international border (agreed in 1923 between French mandatory Syria and British mandatory Palestine) which Syria had occupied during the 1948 war. Under intense international pressure, the Syrians were obliged to withdraw and to agree to these lands becoming demilitarized zones without defining their sovereignty. The Israelis – who had signed up to this arrangement voluntarily rather than under a

Diktat – later regretted this, and attempted to regain control over these lands by provoking the Syrians and then taking advantage of military clashes to expand control over the DMZ. In a candid interview, former Chief of Staff Moshe Dayan had openly admitted that Israel, rather than Syria, was responsible for ‘at least 80 per cent’ of the clashes that had occurred in the DMZ between 1949 and 1967.<sup>4</sup> Perhaps the most serious clash between Israeli and Syrian forces just before the June 1967 war occurred on 7 April 1967. On that day an exchange of fire in the DMZ escalated into an air battle in which Israeli planes shot down six Syrian Mig fighter planes, two of them on the outskirts of the capital Damascus. This was a humiliating defeat for Syria and, again, it put Nasser of Egypt under intense pressure to come to Syria’s assistance.

To sum up, in the spring of 1967 Israeli–Egyptian relationships were relatively calm, in contrast with the tense Israeli–Syrian situation. As we shall now see, what ignited the Israeli–Syrian powder keg into a full-blown war which would also involve other Arab states, notably Egypt, was a Soviet lie.

## THE SPARK – A FALSE SOVIET REPORT

In the literature, there are two competing views on relationships between the superpowers – the USSR and the USA – and the local states in the Middle East during the period of the Cold War (1945–89). One view maintains that throughout these years the local states had their own domestic and regional agendas which they tried, in their different ways, to make the Cold War serve. The other view is that the Middle Eastern powers had been mere pawns in a game played by the superpowers. The 1967 war has often been explained in terms of the first view, and the answer to the question of who first raised the storm and launched the march of events which ended in the short but decisive confrontation between Israelis and Arabs and which almost led to direct

US and Soviet intervention, was clear: it was Nasser. New evidence, however, shows that this was not the case, and in fact what really sparked this confrontation was a Soviet attempt to exploit the local states in order to score points in its confrontation with the US.

To understand how this came to happen we should go back to 13 May 1967, the date on which Anwar el-Sadat, speaker of the Egyptian parliament, was on an official visit to Moscow. When the visit was over Sadat was seen off at Moscow airport by Vladimir Semnov, the Soviet Deputy Foreign Minister, and it was then that Sadat heard from Semnov that according to Soviet intelligence, ‘Ten Israeli brigades had been concentrated on the Syrian border’ ready to strike at Syria; in Cairo the same message was delivered to President Nasser by the Soviet ambassador. Against mounting tension between Israel and Syria – which, as we have seen, was caused by statements from Israeli leaders and troubles in the DMZ, notably the shooting down of six Syrian fighter planes on 7 April – the Russian information was taken very seriously indeed. Nasser now felt he had to act, for he had long been under intense pressure and criticism from Jordanian and Saudi Arabian radio stations for not doing enough to support fellow Arab states. This is why, at a late-night meeting with his deputy and commander of the Egyptian armed forces, Field Marshal Abd el-Hakim Amer, and Sadat, who had just returned from Moscow, Nasser ordered the dispatch of two divisions across the Suez Canal and into the Sinai, with the aim of distracting Israel from what seemed to be, according to the Soviet report, an imminent strike at Syria. It is important to note here that Sinai was Egyptian territory, and although the move was unusual there was nothing wrong with sending Egyptian troops there. In fact, seven years earlier, on 18 February 1960, Nasser had taken similar action in dispatching an armoured division and three infantry brigades – quite a substantial force at the time – into the Sinai to hint to the Israelis that they should leave Syria

alone after they had attacked it at a place called Tawfik. But the difference between the two occasions was that in 1960 the Egyptian mobilization into the desert had been quiet and secret, whereas this time Egyptian troops on their way to Sinai marched through the streets of Cairo shouting: 'We are off to Tel Aviv'.<sup>5</sup>

In addition to dispatching troops into the desert, Nasser sent his Chief of Staff Mohammed Fawzi to Damascus, entrusting him with two missions: first to confirm the Soviet information about the apparent Israeli mobilization, and second to coordinate moves with Damascus. In Syria, Chief of Staff Fawzi went with Syrian General Anwar Al-Kadi to inspect the border, but found nothing unusual. He later recalled: 'I was seeking confirmation about the Israeli troops, but when I arrived on the border I didn't find anything unusual . . . I looked at the latest aerial photos, but again I didn't find anything unusual.'<sup>6</sup> The Syrians – they too had been informed by the Russians of the apparent Israeli mobilization – had sent reconnaissance planes which reported back that 'there was no massing [of Israeli troops] on the border [with Syria]'.<sup>7</sup> The Israelis, in turn, dismissed reports of mobilization as false, and Prime Minister Eshkol even suggested that the Soviet ambassador in Tel Aviv, Leonid Chuvyakin, join the head of the Mossad, Meir Amit, in touring the border between Israel and Syria to see for himself that the Soviet allegations were unfounded; Chuvyakin, however, declined the offer. Neither in Israel nor in Syria had the foreign press reported any mobilization, which, as Abba Eban, Israeli Foreign Minister at the time, found odd, for:

The mobilization of 'Eleven to thirteen Israeli brigades', to say nothing of their concentration on a narrow front, would have had a conspicuous effect on Israel's life. No newspaperman or foreign mission in Israel could have been unaware of it. The disruption of normality in so many families would have been registered in all the chanceries and newspapers of the world.<sup>8</sup>

Israel, as everyone now knows, did not move any forces to its border with Syria, and it is widely acknowledged that the Soviet report, which for a long time has been one of the most puzzling features of the run-up to the 1967 war, was false. An explanation of Soviet motives in issuing a false report is now possible, thanks to recent testimonies of such people as Evgeny Pyrlin, head of the Egypt department in the Soviet foreign ministry at the time the report was released. According to Pyrlin the reason why this crucial and most damaging report was issued was because the Soviets wanted to spark a war between Israel and its Arab neighbours, believing that

even if the war was not won by our [Arab] side a war would be to our political advantage because our side would demonstrate its ability to fight with our weapons and with our military and political support.<sup>9</sup>

That this was all part of the ongoing Cold War between the superpowers is also confirmed by the extraordinary report of a CIA agent, who had heard from a KGB agent that by releasing the report and instigating a full-scale Arab–Israeli war,

The USSR wanted to create another trouble spot for the United States in addition to that already existing in Vietnam. The Soviet aim was to create a situation in which the US would become seriously involved economically, politically, and possibly even militarily and would suffer serious political reverses as a result of siding with the Israelis against the Arabs.<sup>10</sup>

This evidence provides striking proof that, contrary to popular belief, the 1967 war was not instigated by the local states – neither Egypt nor Israel – but rather by the USSR as part of its competition with the US for world influence and supremacy.

Oddly enough, and in spite of Fawzi's findings that Israel had



not mobilized troops on its border with Syria, Nasser did not call his divisions back from the Sinai – in fact he went so far as to reinforce them by dispatching more troops to the desert. Furthermore, on 16 May he instructed UN troops, which since the 1956 war had been deployed on the Egyptian side of the border (Israel would not allow them to deploy on her side of the border) and in Gaza and Sharm el-Sheikh, to leave their posts. Even though these UN troops were not strong enough to prevent either Israel or Egypt attacking the other, they were a symbol of non-belligerence and their removal was seen, and rightly so, as a further escalation of an already critical situation. We should point out, however, that Nasser's action was qualified, for what he did was order the removal of UN troops solely from their positions along the Egypt–Israel border, and not from Gaza or Sharm el-Sheikh, which controls passage through the Straits of Tiran. As Nasser put it in a later interview: 'I did not ask U Thant [the UN Secretary General] to withdraw UN troops from Gaza and Sharm el-Sheikh . . . but only from a part of the frontier from Rafah to Eilat'.<sup>11</sup> Here, however, U Thant acted hastily and foolishly, insisting that either all UN troops remain in their positions, or that they leave altogether. Nasser – he could not back down on the UN issue without loss of face in the eyes of the world and his own people – took the latter option.

A week later, on 23 May, Egypt's president took yet another step, which raised the temperature of an overheated situation to boiling point, by ordering the closure of the Straits of Tiran to Israeli shipping. At a meeting with pilots at Bir Gafgafa air base, Nasser said:

The armed forces yesterday occupied Sharm el-Sheikh . . . under no circumstances will we allow the Israeli flag to pass through the Gulf of Aqaba . . . if Jews threaten war we tell them 'you are welcome, we are ready for war. Our armed forces and all our people are ready for war'. . . . This water is ours.<sup>12</sup>

As has already been shown, the Straits of Tiran were perceived by Israel as a vital interest, and closing them meant bottling up Israel and hampering both vital imports – mainly oil from Iran – and exports. Closing the Straits, as we have made clear, also threatened Israel's ability to develop the Negev. The issue, however, was not only economic but also political, for the Straits had become a test of prestige for both Israel and Egypt. We should recall that after the 1956 campaign in which Israel occupied Sharm el-Sheikh and opened the blocked Straits, it was forced to withdraw and return the territory to Egypt. At the time, members of the international community pledged that Israel would never again be denied use of the Straits of Tiran. The French representative to the UN, for example, announced that any attempt to interfere with free shipping in the Straits would be against international law, and American President Dwight Eisenhower went so far as publicly to recognize that re-imposing a blockade in the Straits of Tiran would be seen as an aggressive act which would oblige Israel to protect its maritime rights in accordance with Article 51 of the UN Charter. Reluctantly, Israel accepted these diplomatic guarantees as a bad second-best substitute for the material security of actual occupation of the Straits. But on 1 March 1957, prior to the withdrawal of Israeli troops, Foreign Minister Golda Meir stated Israel's position before the UN General Assembly in unmistakably clear terms. She said:

Interference by armed force, with ships of Israeli flag exercising free and innocent passage in the Gulf of Aqaba and through the Straits of Tiran will be regarded by Israel as an attack entitling it to exercise its inherent right of self-defence under Article 51 of the Charter and to take all measures as are necessary to ensure the free and innocent passage of its ships in the Gulf and in the Straits.<sup>13</sup>

Yet in May 1967 Nasser ignored all this, and in the full knowledge that the Israelis were likely to react violently, he declared the Straits closed to her shipping. That he did so with open eyes we know from Anwar Sadat, who later testified how Nasser had said to his colleagues, whom he had brought together to decide on the closure of the Straits: 'Now, with the concentration of our force in Sinai the chances of war are fifty-fifty but if we close the Straits, war will be 100 per cent certain'.<sup>14</sup> What is also puzzling is that Nasser took such a drastic move without consulting either Syria or Jordan.

The historian A. J. P. Taylor once said that 'the greatest decisions are nearly always the ones most difficult to explain', and indeed, Nasser's fateful decision to close the Straits will long remain one of the most puzzling features of the 1967 war, and it may never be possible to learn for certain what his motives were. Nevertheless, two possible explanations can be offered to the question why he had decided on this action in the knowledge that for Israel this was a *casus belli* and the Straits represented a supreme national interest, their use being a right which it would assert and defend whatever the sacrifice. The first explanation, simple and straightforward, was probably best stated by Sadat – he would succeed Nasser in 1970 – who wrote that 'Nasser was carried away by his own impetuosity'.<sup>15</sup> Yet there may be a deeper explanation, and that is that in a matter of days Nasser's motive had changed from that at the start of the crisis, which was, following the false Soviet report, the attempt to distract the Israelis from attacking Syria, to a totally different aim, which was to take advantage of the growing crisis to reverse the post-1948 situation in the southern Negev and Eilat.

We should remember that at the end of the 1948 war, and after armistice agreements between Israel and Egypt (but not with Jordan) were concluded and signed, Israel breached these agreements by sending troops to Eilat and occupying it. This was significant, for by seizing Eilat Israel prevented Egypt and Jordan

from having direct land access to each other. In *Al Ahrām* on 7 January 1966, Mohamed Hassanian Heikal, a versatile journalist and intimate of Nasser whose writing frequently reflected the thinking of his president, wrote that it was most regrettable that in 1948 Israel had taken Eilat and thus created a 'wall' between the east and the west Arab world. He then added that in any future war with Israel, Egypt must attempt to pull down this wall and restore the pre-1948 situation in the vicinity of Eilat. It seems that now, with a crisis under way, Nasser decided to take advantage of the situation and achieve his long-held aim of reversing the situation in Eilat. What supports this interpretation is that the specific deployment of Egyptian forces in the desert appear instrumental to achieving such a task. We shall now examine this.

## ON THE BRINK OF WAR: THE OPPOSING FORCES AND THEIR OBJECTIVES

By 1 June – roughly two weeks after Nasser's first mobilization of troops into the desert – the Egyptian forces in the Sinai comprised seven divisions and a strength of 100,000 men. In addition, an infantry brigade was deployed at Sharm el-Sheikh, in control of the Straits of Tiran but not physically blocking it. It is a puzzling but little-known fact that Egyptian troops never blocked the Straits, which remained open before and throughout the crisis. As regards weaponry, the Egyptian forces were equipped with nearly 1,000 tanks, 900 guns of various calibres, 419 aircraft, four missile boats and two submarines. Yet contrary to popular belief, these forces were not deployed in attacking positions but rather on strictly defensive lines. That said, the one force which was ready to strike in the event of war, and thus was deployed in jump-off places, was Saad el-Shazli's, which was not, however, aimed at moving on Tel Aviv, but rather at striking in the direction of the southern tip of the Negev and Eilat in

order to pave the way to establishing a land bridge between Egypt and Jordan. All other Egyptian forces in the Sinai were required to seal and isolate the operational area by blocking potential Israeli thrusts and thus enabling the Shazli force to accomplish its mission.

The Syrian army, which was also now fully mobilized, comprised between 50,000 and 60,000 men with at least 200 tanks of operational capacity and 100 Soviet aircraft, including thirty-two modern Mig 21s. The military aim of the Syrian forces was to occupy eastern Galilee and defend the Golan Heights from any Israeli attempt to seize them.

Jordanian forces were also fully mobilized and deployed. King Hussein's army was 56,000 strong and its main strength lay in its two armoured brigades – the 40th and 60th – mustering some 200 Patton tanks. These were deployed in a counter-attack role in the Jordan valley around the Damiya bridge in the north and near Jericho in the south; their aim was to defend the West Bank and East Jerusalem. A Jordanian–Egyptian force was also deployed in the salient of Latrun, just west of Jerusalem on the way to Tel Aviv. On 30 May, the King and President Nasser signed a joint defence pact. It meant that an attack on one country was seen as an attack on the other, which was required to come to the rescue. The King and the President also agreed that, in the event of war, Jordan's forces would be placed under Egyptian command.<sup>16</sup>

Other Arab forces which were assembling against the Israelis included an Iraqi division, which took up positions on Jordanian territory and two Iraqi squadrons which were advanced towards the Jordanian border and were thus closer to Israeli territory. Small token forces from other Arab countries, including Algeria and Kuwait, were sent to Egypt, and a small Lebanese army was also deployed.

Israel – whose main strength was its reserve force – had started mobilizing on 16 May and moved to full mobilization on

19 May; this was completed by the 20th. The forces were deployed in line with operational plan 'Sadan', which was a defensive posture, but one also designed for a speedy switch from defence to counter-offensive. Regarding Egypt as its main adversary and hoping that both Syria and Jordan would keep out of the battle, Israel had concentrated the bulk of its armed forces in the desert, leaving only scanty forces to fend off any attack on other fronts.

Israel's forces in the Sinai were organized into three divisions; the most northern was commanded by the diminutive Yisrael Tal, and consisted of two armoured brigades in which there were between 250 and 300 tanks. Also under Tal's command and led by Colonel Rafael ('Rafal') Eitan was a paratroop brigade supported by a battalion of Patton tanks. The second Israeli division in the Sinai, based entirely on reserves, was commanded by the veteran Abraham Yoffe and consisted of two armoured brigades equipped with Centurion tanks. The third and most southern division was a mixed force which included an armoured brigade, two paratroop battalions, an infantry brigade, six battalions of artillery and a combat engineer battalion. It was commanded by the robust Ariel Sharon. In addition to these forces there were several independent combat groups: a mixed infantry armoured brigade in the rear of El Kuntilla; the 55th paratroop brigade headed by Mordechai Gur, and a naval task force. Totting up the balance sheet (Table 3.1), it can be seen that the Arab armies had clear superiority both in human and material resources.

The crux of all Israeli military operations in the desert was the offensive, for the strength of the Israeli Defence Force – despite its name – was in attack. Since the 1956 campaign, the IDF had been trained as an assault force whose doctrine of warfare was based on two principles: first, a pre-emptive strike by the air force, and second, the transfer of the war into the enemy's territory.

Table 3.1 Comparison of IDF and Arab forces

	<i>IDF</i>	<i>Arabs</i>
Armoured brigades	10	18
Paratroop brigades	9	53
Tanks	1,300	2,500
Artillery pieces	746	2,780
Fighter jets	247	557
Ground-to-air missiles	5	26

The first military plan, drawn up immediately after Nasser's closure of the Straits of Tiran, visualized the movement of Israeli troops into the Gaza Strip with the aim of seizing it and then using it as a bargaining card to compel Nasser to open the Straits of Tiran. But opinions were divided as to the merits of such a plan. Moshe Dayan – he would later become Defence Minister – strongly opposed it on the ground that the Gaza Strip was not important enough for Nasser to be willing to trade it for ending the blockade of the Straits. In a private meeting with the Chief of Staff, Dayan told Rabin that the plan to capture the Gaza Strip in order to compel Nasser to open the Straits would not work, and added 'What will we then do with all these Arabs (meaning the Palestinian refugees of the Gaza Strip)?'<sup>17</sup>

Under Ezer Weizman – he was then chief of operations, and on 24 May temporarily replaced the sick Chief of Staff Rabin – this plan was substantially modified. Now codenamed 'Atzmon Murchav', it visualized the occupation of the Gaza Strip and from there an advance of troops to occupy El Arish, and thence along the northern coastal axis to reach the Suez Canal. When Rabin returned to full service – he was absent for forty-eight hours and rumours said he had suffered a nervous collapse under the intense strain of the previous few days – he ordered

the war plans to be recast. The air force was now to launch a pre-emptive strike to be followed by a simultaneous thrust of the three divisions in the northern part of the Sinai, in the area between Rafah and Umm Kataf, to break through into the desert and engage the Egyptian forces. Tal's forces operating in the northern sector were to occupy Gaza, El Arish and Rafah, which – controlling a natural passage of approximately ten miles between the sea and the dunes to the south – was considered a critical location as the jumping-off point for other forces into the heart of the Sinai. In the southern sector, Sharon's forces would take Abu Ageila and the Kuseima strongholds, two separate but mutually supporting bases. Sandwiched between Tal's forces in the north and Sharon's in the south, Yoffe would advance over dunes that had been considered to be almost impassable for tanks, and engage the major Egyptian armoured formations in central Sinai before moving deeper into the desert to seal the Mitla and Giddi passes against retreating Egyptian forces. From there the divisions would be ready to move up to the Suez Canal upon receiving new orders.

## ISRAEL – A SOCIETY UNDER PRESSURE

In Israel, meanwhile, the danger of war aroused increasing anxiety, and what came to be known as the 'waiting period', where forces were fully mobilized and the country came almost to a standstill, was nothing but a war of nerves. With news of the closure of the Straits of Tiran, anxiety turned to panic because after years of warnings by its leaders that a closure of the Straits meant war, Israelis could expect nothing but war. Threatening declarations by Arabs fuelled Israeli anxiety. In a speech before unionists on 26 May – just three days after announcing the closure of the Straits of Tiran – Nasser declared: 'The battle [with Israel] will be a general one and our basic objective will be to destroy Israel', and later:



I was told at the time that I might have to wait seventy years. During the crusaders' occupation, the Arabs waited seventy years before a suitable opportunity arose and they drove away the crusaders. . . . The whole question then, is the proper time to achieve our aims. We are preparing ourselves constantly.<sup>18</sup>

In Damascus in the meantime it was announced that the time was ripe 'to liberate Palestine', and a Syrian delegation was reported to be heading to Cairo to coordinate military plans. The defence pact signed between Egypt and Jordan on 30 May – despite the inveterate hostility between the two countries – indicated to the anxious Israelis that this time the Arabs meant war and that Israel was totally isolated and faced a disaster. This all had a strong effect and awakened old memories of the Holocaust; as military commander Uzi Narkiss – he would later lead his forces to occupy Jerusalem – recalled: 'Auschwitz (the death camp where Jews were executed) came up. It never happened before. [Israelis] said . . . "we are surrounded, no one will help us, and God forbid if the Arabs armies invade, they'll kill us"'.<sup>19</sup> Such was the panic that it was reported that Holocaust survivors were rushing to pharmacies to buy poison tablets lest they fell into the hands of the enemy. Rumours were rife, and we now know that these were based on fact, that the authorities had estimated 10,000 dead and, as we also now know, the Chief Rabbi, Shmuel Goren, demanded the preparation of coffins and sent his men to inspect public parks which would potentially become huge cemeteries in the event of war.<sup>20</sup> In *My Country*, Abba Eban describes the mood in Israel at that moment in time: 'A sense of vulnerability penetrated every part of the Israeli consciousness like an icy wind. As Israelis looked around, they saw the world divided between those who were seeking their destruction and those who were doing nothing to prevent it'.<sup>21</sup>

With tensions mounting and the mood becoming desperate, there was strong public pressure on Premier Eshkol to allow Ben

Gurion back as either Prime Minister or Defence Minister. This was because Ben Gurion, the father of modern Israel, had led Israel through the 1948 and 1956 wars and was considered an expert in military affairs, while Eshkol was more of a finance expert. It did not matter to the Israelis that by now Ben Gurion was relatively out of touch, for what they sought was a strong, charismatic leader, and it seemed that Ben Gurion was the right man for this role. But relationships between Eshkol and Ben Gurion were at a low ebb, and Eshkol – an earthbound man and realist by nature, who had invested heavily in buying arms for the IDF in the years before this crisis – bitterly opposed having his predecessor in the cabinet. He said to those who pressurized him to invite Ben Gurion into his cabinet: ‘These two horses can no longer pull the same cart’.

But on 28 May came an event which forced Eshkol to give way to public demand and political pressure. That Sunday he personally took to the airwaves to address the nation, and as he delivered his speech and as Israel heard it over the radio – there was not yet television in Israel – Eshkol stumbled over the words.<sup>22</sup> He read his speech so badly and gave so poor a performance that it left the worst impression. It should be pointed out, however, that Eshkol’s was more a failure of presentation and delivery than of substance, for there was nothing wrong with the speech itself – but such was the national mood that the effect of such a poor delivery was devastating. After his speech, which came to be known as *Ha’neum Ha’megumgam* (‘the stammering speech’), Eshkol was widely criticized.

Now under growing pressure, Eshkol had no other option but to relinquish the defence post and offer it to Moshe Dayan, former chief of staff of the IDF and now a politician in Ben Gurion’s small Rafi party. With the nomination of Dayan, it seemed as if the brake had been released and that the IDF – it could not remain mobilized indefinitely without wrecking Israel’s economy – would be ordered to take action.

## THE EVE OF WAR

On 2 June, Dayan met the IDF high command, and after being presented with the latest war plans he introduced three changes; the first related to the Straits of Tiran. We should recall that the last straw for Israel had been Nasser's decision to close the Straits to Israeli shipping; therefore Dayan held that in the event of a war breaking out, the Straits of Tiran must be opened. His instructions were that while the decisive thrust should be – as already planned by the military – in the direction of the heart of the Sinai desert, there should also be a thrust towards Sharm el-Sheikh to open the Straits. It was necessary to give such an instruction, for although the Straits were the main issue during the 'waiting period', by now the military planners preferred to concentrate on deciding how to engage the bulk of the Egyptian army in the desert and break its backbone. Dayan's second change to the operational plans dealt with the Gaza Strip. According to the military plans which were originally approved by Eshkol before the nomination of Dayan to the post of Defence Minister, Israeli forces were tasked with occupying the Gaza strip. It was, in fact, Minister of Labour Yigal Allon – who was normally on the worst of terms with Dayan – who persuaded Eshkol that Israel should take the Gaza Strip and plan the 'transfer' of its Palestinian refugees to Egypt. But to this he objected strongly, for he held that the entire international community would turn against Israel if it attempted to transfer the Palestinians. Perhaps more importantly, he considered the Gaza Strip to be a place that 'bristled with problems . . . a nest of wasps', a place which Israel should not occupy if it did not want to be 'stuck with a quarter of million Palestinians'. Therefore, in this crucial meeting with the military high command, Dayan ordered that the Gaza Strip should not be occupied, and as he later wrote in his memoirs: '[the plan] now before us received my approval . . . there would be no conquest of the Gaza Strip'.<sup>23</sup>

It is of historical interest to note here that Dayan was not the first to warn of the danger of occupying the Gaza Strip. In 1956, after Israeli troops had occupied the densely populated Strip, Prime Minister Ben Gurion said that he regarded Israel's rule over this compact mass of 'unreconciled people' as being 'as dangerous as dynamite placed at the foundation of the state'. The third element in the war plan which Dayan recast was the Suez Canal. Dayan held that if Israel occupied the Canal and deployed its forces on its eastern bank, a mere 180 metres from Egyptian troops, Nasser would not operate the Suez Canal and he would resume the war against Israel; Dayan therefore gave orders that the troops should stop short of the Suez Canal. The restrictions which Dayan had imposed with regard to the Gaza Strip and the Suez Canal were clear and precise; as Aharon Yariv, then director of military intelligence later told the author: 'Dayan said to the General Staff: "I give you now the instruction of the defence minister: 1. To hit the Egyptian army. 2. Not to reach the [Suez] Canal. 3. Not to enter [the] Gaza [Strip]"'.<sup>24</sup> Dayan's observation that if Israel occupied the Suez Canal the war would continue and if it took the Gaza Strip it would 'be stuck' with too many Palestinian refugees was, as we now know, a deadly accurate forecast of the shape of things to come. One wonders why no one other than Dayan had similar insights, and furthermore how, given such a prophetic sense, Dayan later, as will be shown, gave way and agreed to allow the generals to occupy the Gaza Strip and reach the bank of the Suez Canal.

But still, on that crucial night of 2 June 1967, in the light of Dayan's instructions, a new plan codenamed 'Nachshonim' was prepared and its object was defined as 'Occupying Sinai up to the line El Arish-Jabel Libini-Bir Hasna-Kuseima . . . eliminating the Egyptian forces in this zone and being ready to continue development of the offensive into the heart of the Sinai'. From this newly devised plan two previous military aims were omitted: occupying the Gaza Strip and reaching the Suez Canal.

## BACK TO THE SUPERPOWERS

On 25 May, Nasser dispatched his Minister of War, Shams el-Din Badran, to Moscow to head an Egyptian delegation. Its mission was to obtain Soviet approval for Egypt to strike at Israel, and also to request a supply of war material.<sup>25</sup> Nasser rightly assumed that whoever struck first would enjoy the advantage of surprise and hold the initiative, but he also recognized that acting without Soviet permission to do so would be risky; Moscow might refuse to restock his arsenal after the war, and might also refuse to extend much needed political support. Badran and his delegation met Prime Minister Alexei Kosygin and explained that Egypt wished to strike at Israel. To this Kosygin replied: 'We, the Soviet Union, cannot give you our consent for your pre-emptive strikes against Israel. . . . Should you be the first to attack you will be the aggressor . . . we are against aggression . . . we cannot support you'.<sup>26</sup> It is indeed puzzling that the Soviets, who had instigated the crisis in the first place by spreading the lie that Israel was mobilizing its forces on its border with Syria, were now attempting to control the situation and rein back Egypt.

On his return to Cairo, Badran reported to Nasser that the Soviets would not allow Egypt to strike and would not provide it with much-needed war material, but would intervene in the war on Egypt's side if America were to intervene on behalf of Israel.<sup>27</sup> Nasser was careful to abide by the Soviet instructions and told his military commanders that Egypt would have to absorb a first strike by Israel. He insisted on this in the face of strong opposition, especially from the commander of the air force, General Sudki Mahmoud, who pleaded with him that such a policy 'will be crippling. . . . It will cripple the armed forces'.<sup>28</sup>

Israel was also warned by the US not to take military action. In a tough conversation with Israel's Foreign Minister, US President Lyndon Johnson warned Abba Eban that: 'Israel will not be alone unless it decides to go it alone'. And in a late night meeting

between John Haydon, the CIA representative in Israel, he warned Israel's Mossad Chief: 'If you strike, the United States will land forces in Egypt to defend her'.

On 30 May Israel sent the former general and head of the Mossad, Meir Amit, to Washington. His mission was to see how Israel's view of the crisis compared with that of the American intelligence community (mainly the CIA), to see what would be Washington's response if Israel took action, and also to find out if any preparations had been made to put together an international armada – this had been proposed by British Prime Minister Harold Wilson – which would attempt to sail through the Straits of Tiran in defiance of Nasser's blockade. By this time the sole chance of preventing a general war lay in such an action, and given that, as we have already mentioned, the Straits were declared closed but were not in fact physically blocked (this of course was not known at the time), it might well be that such an armada could have passed without being fired on or even stopped, and war could have been averted. But this was a vain hope. In Washington, Amit found that the plan to set up a joint task force, composed of the principal maritime powers committed to the freedom of passage through the Straits of Tiran, had not even reached the launching stage. He also met Dean Rusk, American Secretary of State, who 'could not agree more' with Amit's assessment of the gravity of the situation.<sup>29</sup> Amit also had three private meetings with James Angleton, the CIA's longtime liaison with the Mossad, from whom he learnt that the Americans would welcome it if Israel were to 'strike [at Egypt]'. To Robert MacNamara, Amit said that he intended to recommend to his government that they launch an attack, to which the American Secretary of Defence replied: 'I read you loud and clear'.<sup>30</sup>

Thus it all came back to the superpowers. The USSR, which had instigated the crisis in the first place by issuing a false report, now showed the 'red light' to the Egyptians, warning them not to be the first to strike, though promising to intervene if America

joined the war. As for the Americans, they had shown an 'amber light' to the Israelis ('I read you loud and clear'), which was interpreted by the head of the Mossad as a 'green light' to go to war. Following Amit's report, the Israeli cabinet decided to order the IDF to attack Egypt.

## THE ATTACK ON EGYPT

A successful air strike was crucial for the overall victory of the Israelis. This was aimed at curbing Egypt's capability to strike at Israeli cities and, perhaps more importantly, to achieve air supremacy over the desert, which would make Egyptian defeat certain. The air operation, codenamed 'Moked', began at 7.45 a.m., as Egyptian pilots were having their breakfast, on Monday 5 June 1967. The air strike took a very roundabout approach, flying via the sea and coming in from the west. While the first wave of Israeli aeroplanes – 183 in all – was making its way to Egypt, the entire command of the Egyptian armed forces, including Marshall Amer and Minister of War Shams el-Din Badran, were also in the air on their way to inspect Egyptian units in the Sinai; to ensure their safe passage and that they were not fired at by their own people, the radar system in Egypt was shut down. This tragi-comic episode, in which the Egyptian command is airborne, the radar system is shut down and Israeli fighter-bombers are on their way to targets in Egypt, symbolizes, perhaps more than anything else, the inefficiency of the Egyptian command, and demonstrates that part of Israel's stunning success resulted from the recklessness, blind folly and ineptitude of the enemy's political-military leadership.

'Operation Moked' was extraordinarily successful and led to a sensational and dramatic victory for the Israeli Air Force (IAF). Within 190 minutes the backbone of the Egyptian air force was broken – 189 Egyptian aeroplanes were destroyed, mostly on the ground, in the first wave of attack, and by the end of the first day

of war a stunning 298 Egyptian planes lay in ruins. Back in his headquarters Marshall Amer was trying to piece together a new plan from the wreckage. He ordered the air force to hit back at the Israelis, but the reply he received was that the little that remained of the air force was unable to carry out any meaningful operation. Nasser was later to complain bitterly that the Israeli air strike eventually came not from the direction his guns were pointing, but from behind: 'They came from the west', he said, 'when we expected them to come from the east'.

Backed by complete air superiority, the three Israeli divisions thrust into the desert to engage the Egyptian forces, which were incessantly pounded by Israeli planes and were no match for the Israeli ground forces. Meanwhile, the spokesman of the IDF announced that since the early hours of the morning Israeli forces had been engaged in fierce fighting with Egyptian forces which had started 'advancing towards Israel'; this was not quite true for, as we now know, the Israelis rather than the Egyptians were the first to open fire.

The retreat of the Egyptian army, though unavoidable, was hasty and chaotic. A skilfully conducted step-by-step withdrawal could have saved lives, or at least proved less costly, but in the event the retreat was very disorderly, with small and uncoordinated groups of troops trying to escape on foot through the desert dunes in the direction of the Suez Canal. The end result was disastrous – for while 2,000 Egyptian troops were killed fighting the Israelis, 10,000 perished in the retreat.

As Israeli forces gave chase in an attempt to cut the Egyptian lines of retreat, they drew closer to the Suez Canal, which Defence Minister Dayan had on the eve of the war ordered them not to occupy. At one point Dayan, thinking that his troops had already reached the Canal, issued orders to pull back. But then, under strong pressure from his Chief of Staff, who argued that militarily it was better to stop at the Canal, Dayan reversed his decision and allowed the troops to resume their advance and



reach the bank of the Suez Canal.<sup>31</sup> Furthermore, following the shelling of the Israeli settlements of Nachal Oz, Kisufim and Ein Ha'shlosha from inside the Gaza Strip, Dayan was requested to allow troops to enter the Strip and silence the enemy's fire. Again, Dayan gave way and allowed a force to enter Gaza, even though a few days before he had said that it 'bristled with problems', was 'a nest of wasps', and was a place which Israel should not occupy if it did not want to be 'stuck with a quarter of million Palestinians'.

Why Dayan gave way and allowed the armed forces to dictate the stopping line is a question to which there will never be a definite answer. But any clues may lie more in the character of Dayan than in any strategic consideration. For although Dayan was renowned as a brave soldier and almost a prophet because of his foresight, he was, on the other hand, too much the pessimist, often failing to fight for his ideas with colleagues or to impose his will on his subordinates; as was the case in the war in the Sinai, where he allowed short-term tactical considerations to disrupt his realistic policy.

## JORDAN

On the Jordanian front war started at 9.45 a.m. on 5 June, as King Hussein's guns opened fire along the border with Israel and Jordanian troops attempted to occupy the United Nations headquarters and other positions in Jerusalem. On this morning the Israelis delivered a message to the King, saying: 'This is a war between us and Egypt. If you stay out we will not touch you'.<sup>32</sup> Upon receiving this message, the King – he was at air force headquarters – said: 'Jordan is not out. Jordan is already engaged'.<sup>33</sup> This is understandable, for with Palestinians making up half of his population, if Hussein had stood aside his kingdom could have disintegrated. In addition, the King may have feared that he would miss the boat if he did not join the war, for

in the early hours of 5 June, a message was received from Marshall Amer, saying: ‘approximately 75 per cent of the enemy’s aircraft have been destroyed or put out of action . . . UAR troops have engaged the enemy and taken the offensive on the ground’.<sup>34</sup> This of course was a lie, but the King could not have known that. After all, Nasser had also called to say that Egypt was doing well. He said to the King – and we know exactly what he said because his conversation was intercepted and recorded by the Mossad – ‘We have sent all our aeroplanes against Israel. Since early this morning our air force has been bombing the Israeli air force’.<sup>35</sup> This too was a lie, for while talking with King Hussein, Nasser already knew that his air force was totally destroyed. We know this because just before calling the King, Nasser had talked with President Boumedienne of Algeria, to whom he announced that the Egyptian air force was totally destroyed, and asked if he could spare a few aircraft. In his talk with the King, Nasser also urged that he join him in publishing ‘an announcement concerning the British and American participation’ in the war. This was clearly aimed to drag in the Soviets, for, as we should remember, the USSR had promised Egyptian Minister of War Badran that, if America joined the war, Russia would come in on Egypt’s side.

Israel’s response to the Jordanian attack was immediate and devastating – it destroyed Jordan’s two air force bases and in fifty-one sorties totally crippled its small air force, before moving to occupy the West Bank and Jerusalem. This was a terrible defeat to King Hussein. He later recalled how he was standing on a hill watching his defeated troops:

My troops were coming back in small groups, very tired. Many of them were saying: ‘Please, your Majesty, find us some air cover and we’ll go right back’. Of course, everything was over by then and I remember asking all these boys to move on to Zarka, so we could begin to reorganize whatever remained . . . I saw all the years that I had spent since 1953 trying to build

up the country and army, all the pride, all the hopes, destroyed . . . I have never received a more crushing blow than that.<sup>36</sup>

## THE LIBERTY AFFAIR

With the war in full swing an incident occurred which would dent Israeli-American relationships for years to come. This was the Israeli air and naval attack on the United States spy ship *USS Liberty*, which resulted in the death of 34 US men and the wounding of some 171.

From the start of the Middle East crisis Washington was keen to follow up events in the region. But the Israelis, contrary to popular belief, were reluctant to cooperate with the Americans by sharing crucial information. With the Israelis failing to cooperate and reluctant to share intelligence, the Americans installed a radar on the roof of their embassy in Tel Aviv in order that they could, by using their own means, detect Israeli air activity and report back to Washington on the start and progress of the war. The Israelis, however, found out about the 'Igloo' which popped up on the roof of the American embassy and, on the morning of 5 June, when their warplanes were about to implement Moked, Israeli intelligence personnel climbed on roofs surrounding the embassy and jammed the radar, thus preventing the Americans from knowing that war was under way. Eager, however, to follow up events in spite of Israel's reluctance to cooperate and obstruction, the Americans dispatched an intelligence ship, *USS Liberty*, to the fighting area to monitor the progress of the battle and report back home. But on 8 June, at 13:58, while *Liberty* was sailing approximately twelve-and-one-half miles off the coast of the Sinai peninsula, in the vicinity of El Arish, she was attacked by the Israelis. The strike was carried out by two Mirage aircraft each making three runs on the ship and, as the first flight finished strafing *Liberty* with cannon and machine guns at 14:04, a second flight of two Super Mystere

aircraft continued the attack by dropping bombs on the American ship.

Over the years there have been speculations on whether the Israeli attack was premeditated – planned and deliberate – aimed at preventing *Liberty* from following up events, particularly that Israel was mobilizing forces in Galilee in order to seize the Golan Heights, or whether it was – as the Israelis have always claimed – ‘a tragic case of misidentification’.

However, from recordings of the conversation over the radio system of Israeli pilots during the attack on *Liberty*, it can be revealed here, for the first time, that the Israelis *did* know after the attack of the Air Force on the ship and *before* the Navy moved in to deliver the knock-out, that this was an American vessel. In these audio tapes, which are in the author’s archive, one can overhear the following conversation between Colonel Shmuel Kislev, then Commander Air Control, sitting two seats away from General Hod, Chief of Israeli Air Force during this war, and Israeli pilots on 8 June 1967 at 14:14 pm.:

PILOT What country [does the ship belong to]?

COLONEL KISLEV [most probably] American.

PILOT What?

COLONEL KISLEV [most probably] American.

Nonetheless, and in spite of the positive identification of the ship as American, 12 minutes later, at 14:26 pm, three Israeli Motor Torpedo Boats led by a certain Moshe Oren arrived on the scene, stopped at a distance and flashed light signals to *Liberty*. When they came under fire from *Liberty* gunners the Israelis responded, at 14:31 – that is 17 minutes after the positive identification of the ship as an American – with a torpedo and strafing run on the ship. Five torpedoes were fired at *Liberty* and four minutes into the attack a single torpedo hit the ship, instantly killed 25, and put *Liberty* out of action. The Israeli official narrative that ‘it was

only a helicopter, sent after the attack in order to render assistance . . . which noticed a small American flag flying over the target' and that it was only 'at that stage that the vessel was finally identified as a . . . ship of the US Navy' was a lie.<sup>37</sup>

## SYRIA

Elsewhere, on the Golan Heights, war did not start until 8 June. In fact the Syrians, after perceiving the fate of Egypt and Jordan, preferred to keep out of the battle, and when asked by the King of Jordan to provide air support they replied that: 'all their aircraft were on training missions and not a single aircraft was available'.

At first Israel refrained from attacking Syria because Defence Minister Dayan felt that if Israel struck, the Soviets might intervene on behalf of the Syrians. He also felt that if Israel occupied the Golan Heights it would never be willing to give it back and the conflict with Syria would continue for years. In the end, however, Dayan gave way, reversed his previous order not to attack, and authorized the occupation of the Golan Heights; in fact he did not even contact the Chief of Staff, who was sleeping at home in the belief that the war was over, but picked up the phone and issued an order to strike. We will probably never know why Dayan reversed his decision; it may be that he feared that after the war he would be blamed for not taking advantage of the situation to hit at Syria, with whom Israel had hostile border relationships. According to Dayan, his change of policy was made following intelligence information indicating that the Syrians would not resist if Israel struck. We now know what was not known even to Dayan at the time – that his prediction, that the Soviets might intervene alongside the Syrians to stop the Israeli advance on the Golan, almost materialized; Soviet planes in the Ukraine were preparing to attack Israeli military targets and Soviet submarines were

approaching the shores of Israel.<sup>38</sup> We do not know why they did not attack.

With Egypt and Jordan crippled, the IDF could concentrate all its strength on Syria, which was clearly no match for the Israeli air and ground forces. ‘We dropped everything on the Golan Heights’, recalled former IAF commander Mordechai Hod: ‘In two days we dropped more that we had dropped on all Egyptian airfields [throughout the war]’.<sup>39</sup> According to Syrian General Abdel Razzak Al-Dardari, who commanded four Syrian brigades on the Golan Heights,

On that morning the Israelis moved ahead. . . . There was a sudden panic and there was an order to withdraw to the south. The pull-out was done in total chaos . . . the retreating soldiers had left their weapons behind and were almost running home. Some were running home even before the Israeli soldiers had come anywhere near their positions . . . there was no air cover nor an Egyptian front to distract the Israelis.<sup>40</sup>

In spite of UN pressure on Israel to stop the war, and rising tensions between Washington and Moscow – the latter threatening to ‘take any measures to stop Israel, including military’ – the Israelis had managed to occupy the Golan Heights.

## EUPHORIA AND DIVISION

The speed of the operation staggered the world, and the Israelis, whose immediate reaction to the stunning victory was euphoria and jubilation as a spontaneous expression of relief that the worst – what seemed to be an imminent second Holocaust – had not materialized and instead Israel had gained a victory with relatively few casualties. Indeed, in six days the battle was over, and by then Israeli troops were less than 50km from Amman, 60km from Damascus and 110km from Cairo. Israel now

controlled an area of 88,000 square kilometres compared with 20,250 before the war, or eighteen times the area which was allotted to the Jews by Lord Peel in the first partition plan for Palestine of 1937. The Sinai desert, the Gaza Strip, the Golan Heights and the West Bank now provided Israeli cities with a buffer zone, dramatically reducing the danger of Israel's extinction by a surprise Arab attack.

The victory had a special historic meaning because of the capturing of territories central to the religious mythical past: the Old Town of Jerusalem with the Western Wall, which is the remnant of the ancient Jewish temple destroyed by the Romans; and the West Bank, which is part of biblical *Eretz Yisrael* and where such sites as Machpela are situated. For Israel's religious community, the occupation of these territories established the relationships between what they define as 'People, God and Promised Land', strengthening their sense of Jewish identity.

But the occupation of Arab land also sowed the seeds of conflict and division within Israeli society; this was apparent immediately after the war, when a fierce debate regarding the future of the occupied lands broke out. A society, which only three weeks before was huddling together and fearing for its very existence, was now beginning to split between those who wished to cling to the occupied land and those calling for it to be given back in return for peace and reconciliation. But it was more than a debate regarding the occupied territories, for in the postwar era, with what seemed to Israelis to be a reduction of external danger because of their newly acquired strategic depth, a whole range of problems began to surface. As Abba Eban, a diplomat and a good observer, has written:

As the pressure of war . . . died down, some of the latent tensions in Israeli society came to the surface. The turbulence took many shapes and expressions but the common factor was the growth of dissent . . . [Israelis now] rejected the idea that

external dangers justified inertia or apathy towards domestic imperfections.<sup>41</sup>

What became crystal clear in the post-1967 war period was that Israeli society was essentially a diverse, turbulent organism which tended to have a monolithic aspect only when facing urgent external danger. And this is precisely what made the 1967 war such a turning point in the life of the Israeli nation and society. For while the war seemed to remove a great external danger to Israel – whose cities were now far from the front – it also, ironically, removed the cement which had kept the people of Israel together. And although, in the postwar era, opinion polls indicated the overwhelming popularity of the national leaders, with those in charge of defence policies supported by staggering percentages, the government was challenged as never before by its citizens. This criticism quickly gathered momentum and reached an unprecedented peak during the War of Attrition along the Suez Canal.

### ‘THE FORGOTTEN WAR OF ATTRITION’ 1968–70

The Egyptian army, we should remember, though badly beaten and crippled, had not been destroyed in the 1967 war, nor did the Egyptian leadership lose the appetite to reorganize itself to hit back at the Israelis, who were now deployed on the other side of the Suez Canal. In this regard, Defence Minister Dayan’s observation, made on the eve of the 1967 war, that occupying the Suez Canal would mean the continuation of war with Egypt, proved prophetic.

On 22 June 1967, less than two weeks after war ended, President Nasser told the Soviet President: ‘Because the Israelis are now in Sinai, we are building our defences on the west bank of the [Suez] Canal. If the Israelis refuse to leave peacefully, sooner or later we’ll have to fight them to get them out’.<sup>42</sup> Moscow was





Map 3 The 1967 Six Day War: Israel's conquests

sympathetic, promising Nasser: 'Soon you will have a larger number of fighter aircraft than you had before the [1967] invasion'.<sup>43</sup> In fact, by the second day of the 1967 war, Moscow was supplying both Egypt and Syria with weapons; 544 airlifts and fifteen cargo ships transferred nearly 48,000 tons of military equipment to both countries. Egypt, whose air force was in ruins, had received twenty-five Mig-21 aircraft and ninety-three Mig-17s, followed by another transfer of forty Mig-21s and six Mig-21s equipped for training purposes; it also received thirty-eight Sukhoi aircraft, as well as 100 tanks. Between 1,000 and 1,200 Soviet advisors also arrived in Egypt to help assimilate and indeed operate the new weapons. As early as February 1968, General Fawzi, the new commander in chief of the Egyptian army, announced that the armed forces had reached 70 per cent of their strength before the outbreak of the June 1967 war.

The first major incident between Egypt and Israel after the Six Day War took place on 21 October 1967, when an Egyptian destroyer torpedoed and sank the Israeli destroyer *Eilat* in international waters off Port Said. Israel retaliated by shelling Egyptian oil refineries close to the city of Suez and setting alight the adjoining oil storage tanks. Clashes along the Suez Canal had developed into artillery duels between 8 September and 26 October 1968, where in two massive barrages Egyptian artillery inflicted heavy casualties on the Israelis. Israel's ground forces retaliated both along the Canal and deep into Egyptian territory. The air force blew up several bridges on the Nile, and paratroops, landing deep inside Egypt, destroyed the electricity transmission station at Naj Hamadi. By carrying out raids into Egyptian territory Israel signalled that it would not confine its retaliations to the Canal area. To some extent these raids compelled the Egyptians to call off their attacks, and led to a relatively calm period from November 1968 until March 1969.

It is important to note here that these clashes, the majority of which were initiated by Egypt, were not random incidents

caused by local trigger-happy military commanders, but rather part of a well-planned Egyptian military programme which envisaged a total war against Israel in three main phases. The first of these was called the 'holding out' or the steadfastness stage; the second was the 'state of deterrence' and the third was to be a total 'war of attrition' against Israel. In a speech on 21 January 1969, Nasser explained: 'The first priority, the absolute priority in this battle, is the military front, for we must realize that the [Israeli] enemy will not withdraw unless we force him to withdraw through fighting'.<sup>44</sup> A month later, in February 1969, Nasser said to the council of ministers:

We should go ahead this year and escalate the situation with Israel and in particular step up the commando operations in Sinai because, as part of the War of Attrition, such operations have a significant impact on the enemy's military deployment and morale. Operations of this sort will force the enemy to keep large numbers of troops under arms, which runs counter to his military policy and stretches his capabilities.<sup>45</sup>

In military terms, the first priority of the Egyptian armed forces, to put it in crude terms, was to cause Israel to bleed to death. As General Fawzi explained to the council of ministers:

[Our intention is] first to provoke bloody clashes with the enemy with the aim of killing the largest possible number of enemy personnel; that is to say, priority will be given to [weakening] Israeli manpower in preference to weapons and equipment, because loss of lives causes greater concern to the Israeli military command.<sup>46</sup>

To impose on Israel what came to be known in Egypt as *Hareb el Istinzaf*, namely the 'War of Bloodshed', was a shrewd way to tackle the Israeli occupation of the Sinai, for Nasser was right in

assuming that the close-knit, highly-sensitive-to-casualties Israeli society could hardly sustain a long and bloody contest – a war of positions – in which it would lose soldiers on a daily basis. The Egyptian plan was to hit at the Israelis not only militarily, but also psychologically: to hit the soft spots of Israeli society.

## THE BAR LEV LINE

Indeed, as the war dragged on and the number of casualties mounted, the Israeli General Staff was obliged to seek ways of protecting the troops along the Suez Canal. This led to the construction of a defensive line of fortifications named after the then Chief of Staff Haim Bar Lev. The line was a chain of thirty-two strongpoints (*Ma'ozim*) stretching 180km from Ras el-Aish in the north to Port Tawfik in the south. Each fort had firing positions, as well as a courtyard big enough to hold a few tanks and allow soldiers enough space to carry on with their daily lives and routines. A paved road linked the strongholds, and a sand ramp was built between it and the canal to prevent the Egyptians from observing the movements of troops inside the forts. Between the fortifications there were observation posts and tank emplacements. Bunkers were built which were covered by thick layers of fill and stones. Between 7 and 12km east of the line, eleven big strongholds (*Ta'ozim*) were constructed. The Bar Lev line on the edge of the water, as Haim Bar Lev explained, was 'only one component of a system which relied on defence in depth'.<sup>47</sup> Troops stationed in the line had to serve as the eyes and ears of this system and, in case of emergency, to summon tanks and activate other resources which were deployed behind them in the depths of Sinai.

IDF opinion was divided regarding the idea of constructing a line of defence along the Suez Canal, and it is curious to see how closely this debate resembled that which had taken place in

France regarding the construction of the Maginot line. In the French case it was the young Charles de Gaulle and a few other military commanders who attacked the idea of the Maginot line, saying that tanks and warplanes, armoured divisions and fleets of bombers had revolutionized warfare and that the advantage would in future lie with the state that could concentrate highly mechanized and fast moving strikepower. Within the Israeli command, it was mainly Generals Sharon and Tal who strongly opposed the building of the line, arguing similarly to De Gaulle, that the advantage would lie with those armies that could manoeuvre and concentrate forces at crucial points in the battlefield, and that the offensive was more in tune with Israel's character and its forces. They also argued that the depth of the Sinai desert occupied in the previous war would enable the IDF to sell ground to gain time, practise shock-absorbing tactics and delay any offensive until the reserves were mobilized. Their bottom line was that the Bar Lev line would force Israel to fight positional warfare, which would be catastrophic to her. But then, what Bar Lev had in mind, as he explained to the author, was not a Maginot line of defence, with a braking function, but rather a line to offer cover to troops under bombardment and reduce the number of casualties. Bar Lev then enforced his will and the line of defence was built and completed in March 1969. We now know that the objectors to the line were probably right, for the Bar Lev line played into the hands of the Egyptian army, which was thus able to proceed with Nasser's plan and impose an all-out war of attrition on the Israelis.

In March 1969, after a relatively calm period, Egypt resumed the war and carried out massive barrages of the Bar Lev line, with 35,000 shells being fired between 8 and 10 March. To this attack and those which followed, Israel's response was to send ground forces to carry out deep penetration raids. On 28 July paratroopers and naval commandos captured the rock fortress of Green Island, the southern hinge of the Egyptian air defence

network, and destroyed its radar and anti-aircraft installations; this opened the way for Israeli aircraft to bomb Egyptian positions. On 9 September 1969, an Israeli seaborne force crossed the Gulf of Suez and landed not far from the Egyptian port of Zafarana, from where it moved for almost ten hours along the coastal road towards Suez, destroying installations on its way before re-embarking. On 26 December, Israeli forces carried out an operation against a new P-12 radar installation to detect low-flying planes, some 250 miles south of Suez; Israeli technicians dismantled the radar and a helicopter carried it back to Israel for examination. But all this was to no avail – the war continued with undiminished fury, the number of Israeli casualties mounted, and uneasiness spread within Israeli society.

## THE STRATEGY OF DEEP PENETRATION

Unable to put an end to the War of Attrition, and under strong public pressure to stop the bloodshed caused by this static war of positions, the IAF was dispatched to execute ‘Operation Boxer’, a massive air bombardment of Egyptian positions along the Suez Canal.<sup>48</sup> This was no more effective. Egyptian shelling of the Bar Lev line continued, and the black announcements, often carrying a photograph of a young soldier, continued to appear daily in the Israeli press. This lowered morale and spurred the Israeli military-political leadership to look for other ways of ending the war. The military command then devised a new strategy of deep penetration by the air force, aimed at bombing positions deep within Egypt, thus relieving pressure on Israeli troops along the Canal.<sup>49</sup> As Defence Minister Dayan put it: ‘The first and foremost aim of the deep penetration strategy is to make it easier for the [Israeli] defence forces to hold the cease fire line’.<sup>50</sup> The plan to bomb deep into Egypt was much helped by Israel’s recent purchase of Phantoms and Skyhawk fighter jets.

The IAF began its bombardment on 7 January 1970 by

attacking Egyptian military camps, including the Headquarters of the Suez Canal, some 30km northeast of Cairo. Throughout January and February 1970, raids were focused on military targets near the cities of Ismailia, Cairo Insha and Hilwan, and between 1 January and 18 April 1970, the period of the bombing campaign, the IAF flew 3,300 sorties and dropped 8,000 tons of munitions on Egyptian positions. No civilian targets were deliberately attacked, but there were human errors which resulted in civilians being killed. On 13 February 1970 a Phantom bombed an Egyptian factory, killing seventy civilians, and on 9 April a hit on a primary school killed forty-six Egyptian children. The pressure on the Egyptians was such that they were forced to reduce resources along the Canal in order to protect its interior, which in turn eased pressure on the Israelis along the Bar Lev line and reduced casualties. But Israel also suffered heavily, because the Egyptian anti-aircraft defence system, thirty times as powerful as it had been before the 1967 war, hit hard at the IAF. In August 1970 a ceasefire was agreed, and until the 1973 war the front was more or less calm.

## THE QUEEN OF THE BATHROOM

The War of Attrition – often termed ‘the forgotten war’ – rarely hit the international headlines, and there are only a few studies of this relatively long and bloody conflict. But it did make a major impact on Israeli society. The decision of Israel’s leadership to construct the Bar Lev line, to send troops on raids across the Suez canal, to bomb along the Canal, and finally to dispatch fighter-jets between January and April 1970 to bomb deep into Egypt, were all desperate attempts to respond to public demand to put an end to an immensely unpopular war. After the euphoria of the 1967 victory there could be nothing as disappointing and frustrating for the Israelis as the War of Attrition. And although Prime Minister Meir claimed ‘Never before has

our situation been better', this was not what the ordinary Israeli felt. What Israelis saw was bloodshed on the bank of the Suez Canal – between March 1969 and August 1970 alone, 138 soldiers were killed and 375 wounded; and a total of 400 Israelis were killed and more than 2,000 wounded between the end of the 1967 war and August 1970, the day a ceasefire between Israel and Egypt came into force. The Israeli public reacted strongly to the costs both human and material. The play *The Queen of the Bathroom* offered perhaps the strongest condemnation, and it was an expression of the Israelis' fatigue with wars and sacrifice. A satirical show, it attacked the 'joy' over war and the 'cult of fatalities'. And although there were some interest groups which boycotted the show and called for it to be stopped, it nevertheless attracted thousands of Israelis and was a novelty in a society which until then had showed itself willing to sacrifice without protest. Worse still, young pupils, on the eve of being recruited into the IDF, sent a letter to the Prime Minister saying 'We don't know if we will be able to do what we have to do in the army'. Such a protest would have been unthinkable before the 1967 war.

It was also a costly war, and defence spending had to rise – in 1965 defence consumption as percentage of GNP was 9.5; it went up in 1966 to 10.4, reached 17.7 in 1967, in 1968 it rose to 18.2, a year later it was 20.2, in 1970 it was 25.7 and in 1971 a staggering 26.3. per cent. While previously there had been hardly any protest against high spending on defence, this was not the case after the 1967 war and during the War of Attrition. Non-European Israelis, mainly of North African origin, had rioted in Jerusalem in March 1971, challenging the government's priorities that seemingly placed social services, housing and other social concerns on the back burner and clearly secondary to spending on defence. Thus, with the approach of a critical year, 1973, Israeli society was deeply divided on a range of issues, and was becoming much more critical of its leadership.



# 4

---

## WAR AND PEACE

1973–9

Anwar el-Sadat, who succeeded President Nasser in September 1970, was perhaps the most dynamic political leader in the Middle East between 1970 and 1979; he made war (1973) and peace (1979), forcing the Israelis to respond to his initiatives. With hindsight we can say that Sadat, more than any other Middle Eastern leader at that time, transformed the international relationships of the region, and also – though indirectly and unintentionally – altered the political scene in Israel itself. By taking Israel by surprise and successfully launching an attack across the Suez Canal on 6 October 1973, he managed to put in train events which eventually resulted in Israelis turning against their leadership and voting for a right-wing Likud government under Menachem Begin, with whom Sadat eventually signed a landmark peace accord on 26 March 1979.

Arab politics is not the subject of this book, but it is

undeniable that the initiative throughout these critical years was firmly on the Arab side – mainly Egypt – and it therefore makes sense to begin the discussion of the 1973 Yom Kippur War, the peace which followed it and the impact of these events on Israeli society, in Egypt.

## THE DARK DONKEY

When Sadat became President of Egypt upon the death of Nasser, he was not taken seriously by his colleagues, who had chosen him for the top job because they considered him to be a front man who would do as he was told and continue Nasser's Arab nationalism and pro-Soviet policies. Nor did Sadat impress the Israelis, who nicknamed him 'the dark donkey' and regarded him as a transitional leader and little more than a figurehead. The Americans regarded Sadat as 'a semi-comic figure'. Indeed, at the time of his appointment to the top job, there was little to indicate that Sadat would become the leading figure in making war and peace in the Middle East in the 1970s. But soon after his accession to power, Sadat began showing his true colours, purging his opponents – mainly the group around Ali Sabri, a pro-Soviet Vice President – and taking bold initiatives in foreign policy.

As early as 1971, Sadat announced that this year would be 'the year of decision' – surely, hardly anyone understood what a 'year of decision' meant – but in an interview with Arnaud de Borchgrave of *Newsweek*, he declared that he would be prepared to recognize Israel and live in peace with her. Soon afterwards, on 4 February, Sadat dropped a 'peace bombshell', announcing in the Egyptian parliament an entirely new initiative. 'If Israel withdrew her forces in Sinai to the [Mitla and Giddi] Passes' (about 48km east of the Suez Canal), he declared,

I would be willing to reopen the Suez Canal; to have my forces cross to the East Bank [of the Suez Canal] . . . to make a

solemn, official declaration of a cease-fire by six, rather than three, months; to restore diplomatic relations with the United States; and sign a peace agreement with Israel through the efforts of Dr Jarring, the representative of the Secretary General of the UN.

As Sadat later remarked: 'None of my opponents had foreknowledge of my initiative . . . they were surprised, indeed dumbfounded, to hear me declare it to the world'. It is hard to say, even with hindsight, whether Sadat's initiative had any chance of succeeding and the prevailing view is still that no compromise could have been reached on the basis of what Sadat was willing to offer in exchange for Israel's withdrawal from the Suez Canal and that neither side was ready for hard discussions at the time. Sadat's insistence on an unequivocal Israeli undertaking to withdraw completely from Sinai was also not helpful in convincing the Israeli government to accept his proposals. Nonetheless, the fact remains that in the early 1970s and well before his decision to launch a war against Israel, Sadat was willing to open a dialogue with her, and he did offer a programme to achieve this aim. The problem, it seems, was more on the Israeli side, where Prime Minister Golda Meir – she had been recalled from retirement to succeed Eshkol, who died in March 1969 – failed to show any flexibility. As a former foreign minister in Ben Gurion's government, she presided, most reluctantly we should say, over the withdrawal of Israeli troops from the Sinai and Sharm el-Sheikh, the base commanding the entrance to the Gulf of Aqaba which Israel had occupied in 1956. Yet the return, under intense international pressure, of this occupied land to Egypt in 1957 did not lead to peace, and in May 1967, as we have already shown, President Nasser dispatched forces to Sharm el-Sheikh and declared a maritime blockade on the Straits of Tiran, to be closed to Israeli shipping. With this in mind, Meir was adamant

and firm in her opposition to the return of occupied land for less than what she considered to be a genuine peace and recognition by the Arabs of Israel's right to live peacefully in the Middle East.

It is important to note, however, that within Meir's cabinet there was a group of ministers which did favour a limited withdrawal from the Suez Canal. Notable among them was Defence Minister Moshe Dayan who, as we have shown in the previous chapter, had objected in 1967 to the occupation of the Suez Canal, and as early as August 1970 had made the suggestion to pull back a little way from Suez so that the Egyptians could then resume navigation and rehabilitate their canal zone cities. Dayan's proposal – he envisaged a retreat of some 35km – was a realistic policy based on the assumption that Israel would be in less danger of war if it pulled back from the Canal so that Nasser could operate it. For with ships sailing to and fro there would be little incentive for Nasser to resume war, since this would prevent international shipping from using the Canal and would result in Egypt losing much-needed revenues. But as we have already seen, in spite of his pluck, prowess and originality, Dayan was no fighter for his ideas and was not someone to impose his will on colleagues, so that when Meir objected to his plan – she saw in it the beginning of an Israeli withdrawal to the old boundaries without the equivalent of a peace treaty – he simply gave way to the Prime Minister.

Meir's reply to President Sadat's offer came on 9 February 1971 in a speech to the Knesset in which, as Gideon Rafael, a senior foreign ministry official, put it, 'She extended him a finger – not a hand'. In retrospect, this was a colossal missed opportunity for, if Israel had only been willing to negotiate an unequivocal withdrawal from the bank of the Suez Canal, the Yom Kippur War might well have been averted. But Dayan's typical reluctance to fight for his realistic policies and Meir's

uncompromising personality combined to pave the way for the immobilism which was a main feature of Israel's policies in the early 1970s, and was eventually to lead to the outbreak of hostilities more devastating than those of any previous war, except for that of 1948. We now know that, in fact, Meir had failed to comprehend the line of thought behind Dayan's proposal to withdraw, and as she frankly put it to a meeting of the central committee of the Labour party on 5 December 1973:

I admit and confess that when the defence minister [that is Dayan] proposed a few years ago that we agree to withdraw from the Suez Canal, in order that the Egyptians open it to shipping and rehabilitate their canal zone cities, I failed to understand what he was talking about. Just like that to suggest that we withdraw from the Canal [without the Egyptians giving us something in return]?

Sadat's offer to open a dialogue with the Israelis was taken much more seriously by American President Richard Nixon who, in the summer of 1971, sent Under-Secretary of State Joseph Sisco – a highly qualified professional and a skilful diplomat – to the Middle East to try and break the impasse by convincing Prime Minister Meir to agree to a withdrawal from the Suez Canal. What very much encouraged the President was that, privately, Israeli Defence Minister Dayan let Washington understand that he was in favour of a withdrawal from the Canal. Nevertheless, as Sisco later recalled, the President said to him: 'Press Golda but if she reacts negatively, don't press it to a confrontation . . . between Israel and the United States'. We should remember that at that time Israel was considered by the American administration to be a reliable strategic asset in the region, and Washington had no stomach to impose on Israel policies which might endanger

the special relations between the two countries. So with a presidential mandate to talk but not to exercise too much pressure, Sisco travelled to Israel and met with Meir's cabinet. But soon he returned to Washington empty-handed and downhearted, and as he later recalled: 'After two days of in-depth discussion, it was clear we weren't making much progress . . . the reaction of the Prime Minister was a negative one'.<sup>1</sup>

In an attempt to persuade the United States that he was serious about opening a dialogue with Israel, and to hint that the key for such a dialogue lay in Washington rather than in Moscow, Sadat took a bold step, and on 18 July 1972 expelled from Egypt 15,000 Soviet advisers. These advisers, who had arrived in Egypt following Sadat's predecessor's visit to Moscow in January 1970, played a crucial role in the Egyptian army, and even took direct part in fighting against the Israelis. But if by taking this step Sadat had hoped that the American administration would react by pressurizing Israel to accept withdrawal he was due for a disappointment. As we have already said, Israel was at that time a strategic asset in the Middle East, and the US administration would not challenge Meir's insistence on not yielding an inch of occupied land for less than a full recognition and acceptance of Israel by the Arabs in the Middle East. Nonetheless, Sadat remained undeterred, and in a further attempt to persuade Washington to help him open a dialogue, he dispatched his national security adviser, Hafez Ismail, to meet President Nixon and his national security adviser Henry Kissinger. Ismail met the President in the White House on 23 February 1973, and he then had three secret meetings with Kissinger on 24–5 February, but it came to nothing, mainly because Washington would not believe Sadat, whose 'zig-zag' foreign policies confused both them and the Israelis. For, at the same time when he was hinting that Egypt was in the American camp, Sadat also signed a fifteen-year 'Treaty of Friendship and Cooperation' with the Soviets,

and when asked by the Americans about this he flatly replied that Egypt was free to make her own decisions.

Back in Cairo, Ismail reported to Sadat on his meetings in Washington and, according to the then Chief of Staff of the Egyptian army Saad el-Shazli, declared that Kissinger had said to him: 'I cannot deal with your problem unless it becomes a crisis', which according to el-Shazli was regarded by Sadat as a sign that 'Kissinger was encouraging him to go to war. That war was the only option'.<sup>2</sup> It is interesting to note that at about this time, April 1973, Kissinger said in an interview to Arnaud de Borchgrave of *Newsweek* that he 'Expects something to happen which can be very serious [in the Middle East]'.

Meanwhile, Sadat was also growing depressed because of the improvement in US/USSR relations which meant, as he saw it, that the superpowers were unlikely to embark on a major initiative in the Middle East lest this put a strain on their improving relationship. *Détente*, in Sadat's eyes, was a new situation likely to reduce the Middle Eastern problem to a minor item on the international agenda and freeze the status quo, leaving Arab lands in Israeli hands.

Sadat was disappointed. His initiatives had run aground, his approaches to Washington had failed to produce practical results, he had failed to dislodge Israel from its entrenched positions, and he had become a laughing stock in the eyes of his own people to whom he had repeatedly promised that the 'year of decision' was around the corner.

## A MAJOR SHIFT IN POLICY

The record clearly shows that quite independently of his diplomatic initiatives, Sadat also gave orders to prepare a plan of campaign for operation against Israel. He summoned a meeting with the Army High Command on 24 October 1972. At this, he explained that 'it is clear that there is no hope of Egypt's

liberating its land through political methods' and he went on to instruct his commanders to step up preparations and be ready to launch a limited war against Israel.<sup>3</sup> This was a startling turn-about, and a radical departure from previous policies, because until then Egypt had clung stubbornly to a policy of total, all-out war against Israel, aimed at freeing all the Sinai which Israel had occupied in 1967. But why did Sadat so dramatically change Egypt's policy from total to limited war, which he knew could only lead to the freeing of part of the Sinai? The reason is as follows.

When the 1967 war ended, Sadat's predecessor Nasser came to the conclusion that for Egypt to be able to embark on an all-out war to liberate all the land it had lost in the 1967 war, two preconditions must be fulfilled. The first was that Egypt obtain Scud missiles so that she could threaten Israel's population centres. The second precondition was that the Egyptian air force be equipped with advanced long-range fighter-bombers to enable it to penetrate deep into Israel and strike at airports, communications centres and other strategic installations. Indeed, during his visit to Moscow on 22 January 1970, Nasser, according to Chief of Staff Mohammed Fawzi who had accompanied him, 'Repeated his demand for [long-range] fighter-bombers because the range of our bombers does not enable us to reach deep into Israel'.<sup>4</sup> Sadat, like his predecessor, also recognized that without these weapons – long-range fighter-bombers and Scud missiles – Egypt would not be able to liberate its occupied lands; and therefore, in a secret letter, dated 30 August 1972, which he sent to Soviet President Leonid Brezhnev, he said:

I mentioned in our frequent discussions that we needed a *retaliatory weapon* which would deter the enemy . . . because of his knowledge that we would then be able to retaliate in kind and attack his inland positions. *It was obvious, and still is, that,*



*deprived of such a retaliatory weapon, we would remain incapable of taking any kind of military action.*<sup>5</sup>

The 'retaliatory weapon' to which Sadat referred was the Scud missile.

Moscow, however, consistently refused to supply Egypt with advanced fighter-bombers and with 'retaliatory weapons', presumably because it had realized that for Egypt to be in a position to strike at Israel was not in Moscow's interest at this time in the early 1970s, because of its improved relationships with Washington. That Moscow refused to supply offensive weapons to Egypt – it only provided it with arms for defence – we know from Sadat's own letter to Brezhnev, where he mentions the 'embargo you have imposed on us for the last five years, in regard to "retaliation weapons"'. That this embargo also included long-range fighter-bombers, which Egypt so desperately needed if it was to embark on a war to liberate the whole of the Sinai, we know from a recent testimony of Pavel Akopov, a Soviet diplomat who was present at meetings in which the supply of weapons to Egypt was discussed. According to Akopov:

I was present at negotiations [regarding the supply of weapons to Egypt] with Nasser, and afterwards the same issues were raised by Sadat all the time . . . Sadat was always putting the question of supplying him with this sort of armament which we could not give them: say, aircraft that could fly from Cairo to Tel Aviv, and he was always asking for them so that he could bomb Tel Aviv.<sup>6</sup>

In this lies the reason for Sadat's decision to abandon the aim of embarking on a total, major war to liberate the Sinai and to concentrate instead on a more limited war. For his realization that Moscow was unlikely to provide him with the long-range

fighter-bombers and Scud missiles which had been seen by his predecessor and himself as the preconditions for a total war against Israel, brought him to the conclusion that he should try to achieve a more limited objective and hope that this would break the political impasse and result in his regaining the Sinai through political negotiations. As Egyptian General Mohamed Abdel Ghani Gamassy put it: 'The idea of a limited war came from the fact that we did not have enough equipment to go into a general war; the Soviets would not give us enough arms'.<sup>7</sup>

As the meeting with his military command progressed, Sadat came to realize that there was strong opposition within the armed forces even to a limited war. General Abdel Kader Hassan, for instance, protested and expressed doubts about the possibility of winning a war against Israel, arguing that Egypt was not yet prepared for such a conflict and was not strong enough to challenge the Israelis, and that:

We might succeed in the initial phase of our attack, but then we would undoubtedly be forced on to the defensive by the enemy. The upshot could be that the Israelis would be in a stronger position than they are now. And what of us? We have to consider that most of our interior has no proper defences against air attacks. . . . We do not want to find ourselves screaming once more for the help of the Soviet Union.<sup>8</sup>

A long and acrimonious debate followed, in which other commanders too expressed their reservations and opposition to launching a war, arguing that Egypt lacked basic equipment and was not yet ready to strike at Israel. But Sadat was adamant, for he had already made up his mind, and because he was not proposing a full-blown major war but a limited one it did not matter that he was not equipped for a total war. He thus curtly told his military commanders that the decision whether or not to embark on war rested with him and not with them. He also

said: 'We are confronted with a challenge. To be or not to be. We will simply have to use our talents and our planning to compensate for our lack of some kinds of equipment. God bless you'. On the basis of Sadat's instructions, the Egyptian High Command began drawing plans for a limited war against Israel, and also embarked on frequent false mobilizations to deceive the Israelis; twenty-two mobilizations would take place between 1972 and 1973, and not until the twenty-third would the attack on Israel be launched.

Sadat wished to attack Israel simultaneously from two directions in order to compel her to split forces and be weakened by having to fight on two fronts. To this end he invited President Assad of Syria to come to Egypt, and they met at Bourg el-Arab in the western desert in April 1973, where Sadat explained that he had: 'decided to fight my battle this year and have issued the relevant instructions to [Minister of War] Marshal Ali'. Sadat then asked Assad 'What do you say to this?' Wishing to regain the Golan Heights which he had lost to Israel in 1967, Assad replied: 'I'll be with you. We're going to fight and are preparing for it'.<sup>9</sup> Proceeding with military preparations, the presidents decided to set up the 'Higher Council' of Egyptian and Syrian generals, which was tasked with cooperating and drawing up final plans for war against Israel, and with working out the detailed arrangements of a deception programme aimed at catching Israel off guard.

## A DOUBLE AGENT<sup>10</sup>

Much has been written about how Egypt, and to a lesser extent Syria, deceived the Israelis by constantly mobilizing forces, bringing the situation along the borders to the brink of war and then demobilizing in order to reduce Israel's alertness, until the moment came to strike on Yom Kippur, 6 October. That the Israelis were caught napping, off-guard and with no mobilized

forces adequate to repel the invaders was often explained in terms of the failure of AMAN, Israeli Military Intelligence, to predict that hostilities would break out, and its insistence on a low probability of war in spite of a stream of information which was flowing in and showed that the enemy was already in jump-off points and strong enough to launch a massive attack. The view that the failure to predict the outbreak of hostilities and as a result to mobilize the reserves on time to repel the invaders was solely due to AMAN, was later supported by the Agranat Commission which investigated the failures of the IDF in the initial phases of the war, and whose brutal verdict, published in 1974, put the blame for the failure mainly – though not exclusively – on AMAN. But we now know that crucial information was concealed from the Agranat Commission, and what is now available clearly indicates that responsibility for the failure to see that war was on Israel's door step and that mobilization of reserves was urgently needed, rested not only with AMAN – it has been done less than justice – but also with the politicians and, in particular, the Mossad which, ironically, was praised by the commission.

To understand fully how and why Israel stumbled into the trap and was caught off-guard on Yom Kippur 1973, we should go back to the days after the 1967 war. In 1969, the Mossad recruited a top Egyptian official. In fact, he recruited himself, knocking on the door of the Israeli embassy in London and volunteering to work for the Mossad. This man, although only in his mid-twenties, was very close to President Nasser and later became the right-hand man of Nasser's successor Sadat. In *Israel's Secret Wars*, Ian Black and Benny Morris quote an Israeli intelligence officer who said of this Egyptian Mossad agent that he was: 'The best agent any country ever had . . . a miraculous source'. Indeed, the man was held in high esteem in Israel, and the documents he had turned over to the Mossad were read – as raw material – by the Prime Minister, Defence Minister, Chief of Staff and Director of Military Intelligence. The Agranat

Commission, which would later investigate Israel's failure in the Yom Kippur War, referred to the information provided by this agent as 'unique material from an especially important Mossad source'. In return, this agent received a generous fee – more than £100,000 for each meeting he held with his Israeli contact.

Perhaps the most important document ever handed over by Mossad's Egyptian agent was the transcript of a conversation President Nasser had in Moscow on 22 January 1970, where he, as shown above, 'repeated his demand for [long-range] fighter-bombers because the range of our bombers does not enable to reach deep into Israel'. Another crucial document which this agent turned over to the Mossad was the secret message addressed by President Sadat to President Leonid Brezhnev, on 30 August 1972, in which Sadat, as we showed above, asked for 'a retaliatory weapon' (meaning Scud missiles) adding that 'It was obvious, and still is, that, deprived of such a retaliatory weapon, we would remain incapable of taking any kind of military action'.<sup>11</sup> The Egyptian Mossad agent not only handed over these two (and other) documents, but he also explained to his Mossad contact that for both Nasser and Sadat, having long-range fighter-bombers and Scud missiles was a precondition for embarking on war, and that without these weapons Egypt would not attack Israel.

On the basis of this dramatic written and verbal information, the entire Israeli pre-Yom Kippur War strategy was recast – it became known as the 'Conception' – and in a nutshell, it assumed that Egypt would make war on Israel only after it had obtained advanced fighter-bombers and Scuds. Israel began to monitor Egyptian airfields for evidence that these weapons had arrived in Egypt, for if they were to, and if the Sinai were still in Israeli hands, then after a period of training and assimilation, Egypt would be prepared for a military attack and would most likely strike.

However, what the Israeli leadership failed to realize was that

the man they considered to be their top Mossad agent in Egypt was, in fact, a double agent also working for President Sadat. And while the information he supplied which suggested that Egypt would not attack without fighter-bombers and Scuds was indeed true at the time, this position was later abandoned by Sadat who, as shown, came to the conclusion that Moscow was unlikely to provide him with these crucial weapons, and that he had no other option but to embark on a limited rather than a total war against Israel. Clearly, the Mossad's Egyptian agent knew about Sadat's new policy, for he was the President's henchman, but he failed to notify the Israelis of the change in policy. For Israel, the unfortunate result of this was that she continued to believe that Egypt was holding to its previous policy.

Furthermore, parallel to providing the Israelis with critical information, this spy also embarked on a campaign of misinformation. He warned of an imminent war in 1972 which never happened, but when he did it again in the spring of 1973 he really did cause difficulties for the Israelis. That spring, he told his Mossad contact that Sadat was mobilizing forces and would attack Israel on 15 May. The arrival in Egypt on 7 April of a squadron of sixteen Iraqi Hunters and sixteen Mirage planes had strengthened the view in Israel that Egypt would indeed strike. To respond to this warning, the IDF High Command drew up a plan codenamed 'Blue-White' which was aimed at mobilizing and deploying reserve forces, speeding up military purchases and crystallizing preparations for war. But views differed within the Israeli military establishment regarding the way Israel should respond to the agent's warning; director of military intelligence Eli Zeira insisted that the probability of war was remote, and he also argued that the Egyptians were resurfacing some of their airports (he mentioned Mansura) and would not embark on war while the work was in progress. But Zeira was overruled by Chief of Staff Elazar and Defence Minister Dayan, who decided that what the Mossad's Egyptian agent had told them about an

imminent attack was probably true and that, although it contradicted his previous written information, it should be taken seriously.

On 19 April, 'Blue-White' was implemented; but the Egyptian attack did not materialize, and on 12 August 1973 the forces were dispersed (this was just seven weeks before the Yom Kippur War). This futile mobilization cost Israel a fortune – \$45 million – and irritated many, particularly the Minister of Finance, who complained that the country was needlessly wasting much money. We now know that Sadat did not intend to attack Israel in April–May 1973 and that the Mossad double agent's report was intended to cause a false alarm as part of his misinformation campaign. 'I had no intention of starting a war in May' Sadat wrote in his memoirs 'but as part of my strategic deception plan I launched a mass media campaign then and took various civil defence measures which led the Israelis to believe that war was imminent'.<sup>12</sup> General Gamassy, the Egyptian director of operations, also said, referring to the April–May Egyptian mobilization, that the actions were: 'Something we did . . . to deceive the Israeli intelligence'.<sup>13</sup> And General Fuad Awidi of the Egyptian army intelligence service said in an interview to an Israeli newspaper: 'The exercises and mobilizations in May 1973 were part of our deception plan'.<sup>14</sup> In fact, as we shall soon see, it was only in August 1973 that a final decision regarding the date of an attack on Israel was made in Alexandria, and that, therefore, 15 May could never have been a D-day for war, as reported by the Mossad's Egyptian double agent.

It is fairly clear, then, that the Egyptian Mossad agent – the double agent – played a crucial part in the Egyptian deception plan, and that what he reported was taken very seriously indeed by the decision-makers in Israel. Although AMAN did indeed fail to interpret Arab intentions, it was the Mossad and the politicians who were so hypnotized by Sadat's right-hand man, who was their top agent, that they failed to realize two crucial things. First,

that the agent's information that Egypt would not attack before obtaining Scud missiles and advanced fighter-bombers ('The Conception') was no longer valid in the spring of 1973 and therefore the Israeli strategy based upon it was erroneous, and war was to be expected even without the fulfilment of the previous Egyptian preconditions. Second, that the man they considered to be their best agent in the Arab world was, in fact, hiding crucial information from them while simultaneously feeding them false information regarding Egyptian intentions, as he had explicitly done late in 1972 and, in particular, in April–May 1973, when his false warning caused a purposeless mobilization in Israel. This latter major call-up had adverse long-term implications for Israel; for it evoked such criticism that when later that year war was just around the corner and a mobilization of the reserves was urgently needed, the Israeli political-military leadership hesitated, fearing that it was yet again a false alarm.

## FINAL PREPARATIONS IN EGYPT AND SYRIA

As we have seen, a final decision by Egypt and Syria to embark on war was not made before the summer of 1973. At a meeting on 22–3 August, in what was once Ras el-Tin Palace in Alexandria, the 'Higher Council' of Egypt and Syria met, and as the Syrian chief of operations Abdel Razzak Al-Dardary later recalled: 'We agreed on the last points of cooperation between the two fronts. We put the final touches. We finalized the deception plan'.<sup>15</sup> After two days of secret talks, the military planners were ready to inform their political leadership – Presidents Sadat and Assad – that two time periods in the coming months, 7–11 September and 5–10 October, would be suitable for launching an attack on Israel, and all the military required was an advance warning of fifteen days.<sup>16</sup>

On 28 August, Sadat flew to Saudi Arabia to inform King Feisal that he intended to strike at Israel and to ensure the King's



financial support during and after the war. It should be mentioned here that Sadat was accompanied, among others, by the associate who had been providing misleading information to the Mossad. This man was present at a meeting between the President and the King in which Sadat confirmed that he was to embark on an all-out war against Israel. After this meeting, however, this Mossad agent would falsely report to the Israelis that Sadat had decided to postpone the war – a lie, and unequivocal proof that he was deliberately misleading the Israelis.

Sadat also visited Qatar and Syria, and discussed the final war plans with President Assad, after which Assad convened the regional leadership of the Ba'ath Party, to whom he said: 'It seems that our Egyptian brothers have decided that the political path is no longer getting them anywhere . . . if Egypt goes to war and we decided against war, that would be bad for our image before the Arab world'.<sup>17</sup> One of the participants, George Saddeqni, who became Minister of Information on 26 September, later recalled that 'This statement made us feel that the decision had already been made and that the president was consulting us as a formality'.<sup>18</sup>

In Cairo on 13 September, Presidents Sadat and Assad and King Hussein of Jordan convened for a summit meeting. In fact, neither Sadat nor Assad wished to meet the King, who had been ostracized by the Arab world because of his harsh treatment of the Palestinians during 'Black September' in 1970, and his expulsion of them in July 1971 after continued fighting. Egypt had, in fact, severed diplomatic relations with Jordan in March 1972 because of Hussein's attempts to unite Jordan with the West Bank after an Israeli withdrawal which implied peace between Jordan and Israel. But now under pressure from King Feisal of Saudi Arabia, whose financial support was essential for the implementation of the campaign, Sadat agreed to mend fences with Hussein and invited him to join the summit in Cairo. Yet nothing was said to him about the possibility of war against

Israel, and as Zeid Rifai, Jordanian Prime Minister, later testified: ‘The discussions did touch on the Arab–Israeli conflict but neither one, Sadat or Assad, mentioned anything about the vague possibility of a war. Never, never was the topic mentioned’.<sup>19</sup> But through their own contacts the Jordanians discovered that there was a joint Syrian–Egyptian plan to attack Israel, and as the King was against war – for he did not want Israeli or Syrian troops to cross his territory, nor to be forced to join the battle by domestic pressure as was the case in 1967 – he decided to warn the Israelis. A meeting was arranged for him with Israel’s Prime Minister Meir – the strictest secrecy was kept – and on 25 September 1973 he flew his helicopter to Israel where he met the Prime Minister in the *Midrasha*, the Mossad’s HQ in Herzliva just north of Tel Aviv. This is what he told Golda Meir (their exchange is presented here verbatim):

**KING HUSSEIN** From a very very sensitive source in Syria, that we have had information from in the past and passed it on, in terms of preparations and plans, actually all the units that were meant to be in training and were prepared to take part in this Syrian action are now, as of the last two days or so, in position of pre-attack. That were meant to be part of the plan, except for one minor modification – the 3rd division is meant also to cater for any possible Israeli movement through Jordan on their flank. That includes their aircraft, their missiles and everything else, that is out on the front at this stage. Now this had all come under the guise of training but in accordance with the information we had previously, these are the pre-jump positions and all the units are now in these positions. Whether it means anything or not, nobody knows. But I have my doubts. However, one cannot be sure. One must take those as facts.

**GOLDA MEIR** Is it conceivable that the Syrians would start something without full cooperation with the Egyptians?

**KING HUSSEIN** I don’t think so. I think they would cooperate.<sup>20</sup>

This was an extraordinary event – King Hussein, whose country was officially at war with Israel, flew to the enemy to warn it of an imminent invasion by his Arab brothers. We will never know why Meir did not ask the King the crucial question: ‘When will they attack?’, but she did call her Defence Minister Dayan, notify him of her meeting with the King and tell him of the warning. As the conversation between Meir and King Hussein was secretly taped and filmed by the Mossad, Dayan also received the transcript, which was in English, and which he passed over to the Chief of Staff who, on the next day, 26 September, discussed the matter with his colleagues. As extracts from this discussion are now available, it is shocking to realize that the Israeli High Command, and Defence Minister Dayan himself, simply failed to understand what the King was saying to the Prime Minister. For while, as the above extract shows, the King’s warning was that ‘[Egypt and Syria] would co-operate [in their attack]’, Chief of Staff Elazar said in the meeting that: ‘It is not known if [Syrian preparations to open fire] are in cooperation with the Egyptians’. He also said – disregarding the fact that according to the transcript the King’s was a clear warning of a joint Egyptian–Syrian attack – that ‘There could be nothing more idiotic for Syria than to attack on its own’. Dayan also failed to understand what the King was saying, and commented that the Syrians ‘will find it difficult to go to war without Egypt’. Thus, ironically, Prime Minister Meir, whose English was perfect – she grew up in America – failed to grasp the importance of Hussein’s warning, while Dayan and the military command, probably because of their poor command of the English language, simply failed to understand that the King was giving warning of a joint Egyptian–Syrian attack. The end result was that the crucial warning – just ten days before the war – was not heeded; no reserves were mobilized to deter the assembling Syrians and Egyptians or to block them when they started moving.

All this time the build-up of Egyptian and Syrian forces

steadily continued. In Egypt mobilization was announced on 27 September, but to lull suspicion and to camouflage its intention the Egyptian High Command ordered, on 4 October, the demobilization of 20,000 men of the 27 September intake. Furthermore, instructions for officers desiring to leave during the course of the exercise to take part in the *Umrā*, the small pilgrimage to Mecca, were announced in *Al-Ahrām*. On 1 October the Egyptian 'strategic exercise' called 'Tharir 41', which included massive movements of troops and armour and was to last until 7 October, had started; on the 6th the exercise maps would be replaced with the genuine war maps. In Syria, in order to lull Israel's suspicion, the new Minister of Information George Saddeqni had announced that, in the week of 6 October, Assad would be visiting the faraway provinces of Deir Al-Zour and Hasaka.

On 3 October 1973, a three-man Egyptian delegation – Minister of War Ahmed Ismail, intelligence officer Hassan Gretly and Chief of Staff of the Federal Operation General Staff Bahey Edin Noufal – flew to Damascus on a secret special mission. Noufal later recalled:

We went on a cargo plane and no one knew we were going. We had to deliver the final order of war to the Syrians by hand. Ahmed Ismail joked while we were sitting uncomfortably in the cargo plane, saying 'What happens if the Israelis catch us and they find us with the order of war?' I said: 'I will simply eat the piece of paper, it is small and easy to swallow'. We asked to see [Syrian Minister of Defence] Mustapha Tlas. When we arrived Tlas was very surprised because he didn't know we were coming. He quickly gathered all the top brass at headquarters. We discussed the date again; the Syrians were unhappy because they wanted more time to empty their oil refineries [at Homs, which would be a certain target for Israel]. We couldn't agree on this.<sup>21</sup>

They fixed 6 October as the date of war, though there was an argument about the timing of the attack. The Egyptians wanted to start it in the late afternoon, so that the sun would be in the eyes of the Israelis and Egyptian engineers could build bridges over the Suez canal under cover of darkness. The Syrians, on the other hand, wanted a dawn attack so that the sun rising from the east would blind the Israelis; the two sides settled on 2 p.m.<sup>22</sup>

That day, President Sadat called in the Soviet Ambassador Vladimir Vinogradov, to whom he said: 'I'd like to inform you officially that I and Syria have decided to start military operations against Israel so as to break the present deadlock'.<sup>23</sup> In spite of the July 1972 expulsion of the Soviets, there were still a few hundred in Egypt (and also in Syria) whom the Soviet authorities now decided to evacuate. The next day five giant Antonov-22s landed to pick up Russian families from Syria, and six arrived in Egypt. Additionally, Soviet ships began steaming out of Alexandria to the open sea, and a Soviet ship carrying supplies wandered around in the Mediterranean, not entering the port of Alexandria. All this traffic was picked up by AMAN, Israel's military intelligence.

On Friday at 11.30 a.m., Prime Minister Golda Meir convened her cabinet – there were five ministers in addition to herself – to discuss the situation. The Chief of Staff and Director of Military Intelligence described the situation at the fronts. The Syrians and Egyptians, they reported, were ready at jump-off points, which served well for defence and equally well for launching an attack. The evaluation of the Director of Military Intelligence, which was accepted by the Chief of Staff, was that an attack was not likely and the assumption was that if war was imminent, there would be further indications and intelligence reports to this effect. The cabinet decided to entrust the Prime Minister with the authority to mobilize the reserves if this should be necessary the next day (the next meeting of the cabinet was scheduled for Sunday).

Had mobilization been ordered on Friday – for according to Israeli doctrine of warfare such a concentration of enemy troops along the borders did indeed merit a mobilization – history might have taken a different turning, but this was not to be the case. It seems that those present at this crucial Friday meeting – just a day before war broke out – believed, wrongly as we shall soon see, that even if attacked, Israel's regular forces and the IAF could check the invaders and at least impose a delay on their advance until the arrival of the reserves; at the same time they grossly underestimated the enemy's strength. What also deterred them from authorizing all-out mobilization was a fear that an increase in the fighting forces might be seen as a threat and so accelerate the danger of war and even spark a clash of arms. Of course, the false mobilization of April–May 1973 which had cost Israel a fortune and led to heavy criticism was still fresh in their minds, and they hesitated to call up the reserves lest this should turn out to be yet another false alarm.

Let us now turn to the forces concentrated on both sides of the borders and examine their military aims.

## THE OPPOSING FORCES AND THEIR AIMS

### **Sinai**

Egypt's combat force on the eve of the war comprised nineteen infantry brigades, eight mechanized brigades, ten armoured brigades, three airborne brigades, an amphibious brigade and an R-17E SSM brigade. In terms of weaponry these forces had about 1,700 tanks, 2,000 armoured vehicles, 2,500 artillery pieces, 1,500 anti-tank guns, 700 anti-tank guided weapons, several thousand RPG-7 portable anti-tank projectiles and more than a thousand RPG-43 anti-tank grenades. The equipping of Egyptian troops with a massive number of anti-tank guns was an

important development missed by the Israelis, and was to cause them great damage, particularly in the initial phases of the war. The Egyptian air force had 400 fighter-bombers, seventy transport aircraft and 140 helicopters, and in the air defence 150 SAM battalions and 2,500 anti-aircraft guns. The SAM missile umbrella, which the Egyptians had advanced closer to the Suez Canal bank after and in breach of the Israeli–Egyptian ceasefire agreements of 7 August 1970, would totally neutralize the IAF in the initial phase of the war and would prevent it from striking at Egyptian troops and supporting Israeli ground forces. In their navy the Egyptians had twelve submarines, five destroyers, three frigates, twelve submarine chasers, seventeen CSA and Komar class missile patrol boats, thirty Shershaen and P-6 motor-torpedo boats, fourteen minesweepers and fourteen landing craft. This substantial force was reinforced by other Arab contingency forces: from Algeria a Mig-21 squadron, an SU-7 squadron, a Mig-17 squadron and an armoured brigade; from Libya two Mirage III squadrons and an armoured brigade; from Iraq a Hawker Hunter squadron; from Morocco and Sudan each an infantry brigade; from Kuwait and Tunisia each an infantry battalion.

The Egyptian military plan named 'Operation Badr' was straightforward, incorporating a thrust by five infantry divisions – the three northern divisions constituted the 2nd army and the two southern divisions the 3rd – across the Suez Canal on the widest possible front, virtually the entire length of the Canal. Such a wide invasion would not give the Israelis any clue as to the main thrust of the attack, and thus confuse and prevent them from concentrating forces for a counter-attack. To enable the Egyptian troops to hold their bridgeheads, they were each reinforced with an armoured brigade, a battalion of self-propelled SU-100 anti-tank guns and an anti-tank guided weapon battalion. The Israelis knew the finest details of the Egyptian military plan; a document of some forty pages setting

out the plan and including detailed maps had been supplied to them by the CIA on 16 April 1972.

As already explained, the essential feature of the Egyptian military plan was that it was intended as a limited operation: after crossing the Suez Canal and gaining a foothold on its eastern bank, forces were to penetrate no more than 10–15km into the desert and then dig in. This was a logical way to proceed, because a limited move across the Canal and into the desert would enable the Egyptian forces to remain under the protection of the SAM missile umbrella, thus deterring the IAF from harassing them.

However, during the planning phase, the Syrians insisted that the Egyptians move deeper into the Sinai in order to pin down Israeli forces and ease potential pressure on Syria. To please the Syrians and in order not to lose them as crucial partners in the war, the Egyptians tricked them by drawing a false attack plan which indicated deeper penetration into the desert in the direction of the Sinai passes, some 48km east of the Canal. Chief of Staff of the Egyptian army el-Shazli later said of this bluff: 'We made this other plan extending our advance all the way to the passes only in order to show it to the Syrians'.<sup>24</sup> The latter, in turn, swallowed the bait, and as Syrian Minister of Defence Mustapha Tlas later recalled: 'So it was agreed that the Egyptians would advance to the [passes] . . . and meanwhile we would occupy the Golan Heights'.<sup>25</sup>

The Israeli defence plan against any potential Egyptian offensive was basic and unimaginative. Called *Shovach Yonim* ('Operation Dovecote'), it was drawn up by the IDF in August 1970. Under it, the 180km front – 160km along the Suez Canal and 20km along the Mediterranean – was divided into three sectors: northern, central and southern. The northern sector was to resist any potential attack in the direction of Kantara-El Arish; the central sector opposed a potential offensive from Ismailia in the direction of Abu Ageila, and the southern sector was to repel any



potential thrust from Suez in the direction of the Mitla and Giddi passes. Within each sector there were three lines of defence: the front line comprised the Bar Lev line, which together with the Suez Canal formed a formidable barrier 180m wide, on the eastern side of which and rising to a height of 20m stood a gigantic sand dune, sloping in places at 45–65 degrees, which ran so close to the Canal that its face merged with the steeper gradient of the concrete banking. The second Israeli defence line was 5–8km behind the Suez Canal and comprised three battalions, forty tanks to a battalion, with a battalion assigned to each sector. The third line of defence, between 19km and 32km behind the Canal, was based on reserve forces and comprised three armoured brigades, 120 tanks to a brigade, less the battalions forward in the second line. The Israeli plan was that, if attacked, the second line of defence should move up to its firing position at the water's edge or to the ramps just behind it, and the third line move up to the second line in order to create a front line of defence made up of a brigade of infantry in the Bar Lev line plus 120 tanks in three tank battalions.

On the eve of the Yom Kippur War the entire Israeli line of defence was held by a mere ten infantry platoons, twelve artillery batteries (fifty-two cannons), 290 tanks, two ground-to-air missiles (Hawks), and six anti-aircraft batteries. This very thin shield of 450 troops was deployed in sixteen strongholds and four observation points. The reason why there were so few troops along the Suez Canal and why only about half of the Bar Lev line positions were manned, was that Ariel Sharon, OC Southern Command until a few weeks before the war, did not believe in the concept of the Bar Lev line, but after failing to persuade his superiors that a line of defence would crumble in war and therefore Israel's strategy should be mobile – in which he was to be proved right – he retained the line but shut down sixteen out of its thirty strongholds.<sup>26</sup> The result was that the fortifications were too far apart to give each other effective fire

support and, when war broke out, the Egyptian troops after crossing the Canal were able to move into the desert mainly through the wide gaps between these fortifications.

## **The Golan Heights**

On the Golan Heights, a Syrian force of three infantry divisions and a strength of 45,000 men was deployed, with each division made up of two infantry brigades, a tank brigade and a mechanized brigade. The 7th division with its 68th and 85th infantry brigades was in jump-off positions in the northern sector; the 9th division with its 52nd and 33rd infantry brigades was deployed and in jump-off points in the central sector; and the 5th division, which included the 112th and 61st infantry brigades, also in jump-off places and deployed along a line stretching from Rafid to the Yarmouk. In addition to 540 tanks which were with the front-line forces, the Syrians had an extra 460 tanks in reserve just behind the first line. Additional Syrian forces included the Republican Guard, a brigade in strength which was equipped with T-62 tanks and whose mission was to protect the regime in Damascus, and two armoured brigades and some 200 static tanks in the line, making a total of approximately 1,500 Syrian tanks ready for battle; this formidable force was supported by 942 pieces of artillery. Other Arab countries sent forces to help the war effort; Iraq sent to Syria three Mig-21 squadrons, a Mig-17 squadron, its 3rd armoured division and an infantry division. Morocco sent to Syria a tank regiment, and Jordan sent its 40th and 3rd armoured brigades; the latter, however, did not arrive until 22 October and so did not take part in fighting. The Syrian forces were concentrated under an umbrella of thirty-six ground-to-air missiles which were deployed on the Golan Heights and close to the capital Damascus. This missile system covered an area stretching 8km into Israel's territory and was capable of detecting anything flying under 500ft. This was

an immense problem to the Israelis, for it denied the IAF freedom of movement even on its own land. This threat seemed so formidable that in the summer of 1973, Deputy Chief of Staff Yisrael Tal proposed that it be destroyed. However, his proposal was rejected and, as we shall see, later in the war the IAF would pay a heavy price for this.

The Syrian war plan was called *Mashrua 110* ('Operation 110') and it envisaged the occupation of the Golan Heights, the establishment of bridgeheads west of the Jordan river, and then movement towards Nazareth in Israel's Galilee. Syrian troops were also to seize the Israeli Hermon foothold, which at a height of 2,100m above sea level had provided the Israelis with an ideal observation point into the adjacent territories of Syria. As with the Egyptian war plan, AMAN knew the Syrian war plan down to its finest operational details.

The Israeli forces facing the Syrians comprised ten infantry platoons, 178 tanks, and eleven artillery batteries with a total of forty-four pieces. This force was much bigger than the standard force deployed on the Heights, the reason being the rising tensions between Israel and Syria following a major air battle on 13 September 1973. That day, two Israeli Phantoms and four Mirages had flown over Syrian territory on a photo-reconnaissance mission, and when the Syrians dispatched Migs to deflect them an aerial battle ensued in which the Israelis shot down eight Migs, losing one Mirage of their own. An attempt by the Israelis to rescue their Mirage pilot, who had ejected, led to a second dogfight and ended in the shooting down of another four Migs, bringing the total Syrian losses to twelve and so causing them a major humiliation. In the past, the Syrians had reacted massively to incidents of such gravity, but on this occasion days had passed without a reaction, which caused suspicion and uneasiness on the Israeli side, and apprehension that the Syrians were planning a large retaliatory action. At a General Staff meeting on 24 September, Defence Minister Dayan agreed to demands made by

Yitzhak Hofi – he had taken over as GOC Northern Command in 1972 – to reinforce his forces on the Golan Heights and strengthen the front line.<sup>27</sup> This reinforcement was backed up by a visit made by Dayan on 26 September, which was the eve of *Rosh Hashana*, the Jewish New Year, to the Golan Heights, where he also issued a firm warning to the Syrians. It is interesting to note that Dayan's tour of the Golan Heights came a day after King Hussein's visit to Israel when he had warned that Egypt and Syria intended to launch an attack on Israel. It might be that Dayan's trip to the north was partially a result of Hussein's warning. As we will see, this reinforcement was crucial, and when war broke out a few days later, Israeli forces on the Golan Heights performed better than those in the Sinai.

The Israeli military plan to meet any potential challenge from Syria was called 'Operation Chalk' and its sole aim was 'to destroy [any] enemy forces' attempting to retake the Golan Heights.

## WAR

Saturday 6 October: in Israel Yom Kippur, the most sacred day in the Jewish calendar, and in the Arab world the tenth day of the month-long fast of Ramadan. This is what happened in Egypt, Syria and Israel between 1 and 2 p.m. of this day.

In Egypt President Sadat arrived in Centre no. 10, the headquarters from where he was to direct the war; he was wearing his uniform, as the President of Egypt is also the supreme commander of the armed forces. Just before 2 p.m., 222 Egyptian bombers took off from seven airfields and flew low on bombing missions against Israeli military targets in the Sinai. The opening gambit of the Egyptians in 1973 was similar to that of the Israelis in 1967 – a massive air strike. Soon after, Egyptian guns began a tremendous bombardment and in the first minute of the attack

10,500 shells landed on Israeli positions at the rate of 175 shells per second.

*In Syria* In the operations room, a bunker two floors underground, President Assad arrived wearing his military uniform. Then, according to the testimony of former Minister of Information George Saddeqni:

A few minutes before 2 o'clock there was silence. There was this big white clock on the wall and everyone was staring at it in complete silence. At 2 sharp, the telephone rang and Assad picked it up. The war had started. Then the telephones started going wild and there was a lot of commotion in the operations room.<sup>28</sup>

Sixty Syrian aircraft – part of the combined Egyptian–Syrian air attack which was called *Awasef* ('Storms') – flew to bomb Israeli targets, and Syrian guns opened a fierce and intense barrage to soften up Israeli positions.

*In Israel* Ministers and military personnel were at an emergency meeting at the office of Prime Minister Meir in Tel Aviv. A final confirmation that war would break out was given in person to head of the Mossad Zvika Zamir by Sadat's henchman who, as we have already mentioned, was an agent of Mossad. This top Egyptian spy had travelled to what is often described in Israeli literature as a 'European capital'; it was, in fact, London. How did he slip out of Egypt on the eve of the war? His boss Sadat must have known about it. Was it with the consent of Sadat who was using him to mislead the Israelis? We will probably never know for certain the answers to these questions, but at that late-night meeting between 5 and 6 October, in a flat in London, he told Zamir that war would break out at 6 p.m. on 6 October. This warning, he must have known, was too short a notice for the

Israelis, whose main force was based on reserves which had to be called up. But even now he was clearly misleading the Israelis, for the war did not start at 6 p.m., as he told Zamir, but four hours before, at 2 p.m.

Mobilization of reserves started at around 10 a.m. on 6 October, but this only got under way after an acrimonious argument between Defence Minister Dayan and Chief of Staff Elazar. Dayan favoured a limited mobilization of the air force and two divisions, one to the north and the other to the south, which could, he mistakenly believed, together with the IAF hold up the attackers. Elazar, on the other hand, insisted on full mobilization so he could undertake an immediate counter-attack; Elazar was attack-minded but for this he urgently needed considerable force. As the two failed to agree, the matter was brought to the Prime Minister to decide. 'My god', she later confided to her memoirs 'I had to decide which of them is right?'<sup>29</sup> In the end, Meir opted for Elazar's proposal and full mobilization was ordered. But much time was lost; from the final confirmation given to the head of the Mossad by Sadat's henchmen in London that war would break out – it was passed by Zamir to Israel at 4 a.m. on 6 October – to the actual start of war at 2 p.m. there remained ten hours, of which about five had been spent on endless arguments between Dayan and Elazar regarding how many troops to mobilize. In the meantime none were mobilized until Prime Minister Meir took the final decision. It is ironic that in the Six Day War of June 1967, stunning Israeli success was partly due to the recklessness of the Egyptian High Command, whereas now it was the other way round and the initial success of Egypt and Syria was partly due to the foolishness and ineptitude of Israel's leadership.

At 2.05 p.m., while the meeting at Meir's office was still under way, the aide-de-camp of the Defence Minister walked in and passed a note to Dayan. It said: 'The Syrians and Egyptians have opened fire, the Syrian air force dispatched aeroplanes,

Egyptian dinghies cross the [Suez] Canal, Sherm [el-Sheikh] and military bases in west Sinai are under bombardment'.<sup>30</sup> The Egyptian and Syrian offensive was now in full swing. The following is an extract from the diary of Egyptian Chief of Staff General Shazli describing the crossing of the Suez Canal:

At 1420 hours, they (the Egyptian divisions) opened direct fire against the Bar Lev strongpoints. And the 4,000 men of Wave One poured over our ramparts and slithered in disciplined lines down to the water's edge. The dinghies were readied, 720 of them, and a few minutes after 1420 hours, as the canisters began to belch clouds of covering smoke, our first assault wave was paddling furiously across the canal, their strokes falling into the rhythm of their chants 'Allahu Akbar . . . Allahu Akbar . . .'.<sup>31</sup>

And head of operations Abdel Ghani Gamassy recalled: 'Our troops crossed the [Suez] Canal. They were shouting "God is great, God is great" and they planted the Egyptian flag on the Sinai itself'.<sup>32</sup> Each of the five Egyptian divisions crossed the Canal and built a bridgehead which connected with each other to create a continuity along the front. Every fifteen minutes a wave of troops crossed, and by 3.15 p.m. the Egyptian army had already put twenty infantry battalions – 800 officers and 13,500 men complete with portable and hand-dragged support weapons – into the desert. At 5.30 p.m. the Egyptians began landing commando forces carrying portable anti-tank weapons deep in the Sinai in an attempt to prevent the Israeli reserve forces from reaching the front line at the Suez Canal. Forty-eight helicopters carrying commandos flew into the desert; twenty of them were shot down, but those which did get through did much damage to Israeli reserves arriving on the scene. In the meantime the crossing had continued in earnest. This is an extract from General Shazli's diary of war, dated Sunday, 7 October:

By 0800 hours the battle of the crossing had been won. . . . In 18 hours we had put across the canal 90,000 men, 850 tanks and 11,000 vehicles. . . . Over the whole 24 hours, the total grew to 100,000 men, 1,000 tanks and 13,500 vehicles.<sup>33</sup>

The 505 Israeli troops in the Bar Lev line (when war broke out, fifty-five soldiers whose tanks had been hit joined the 450 in the strongholds) were mostly ill trained low-grade troops of the Jerusalemite brigade; they found themselves in desperate straits and could do little to stem the Egyptian troops who surged across the Canal like a tidal wave and had immense numerical superiority. The Bar Lev line crumbled quickly and the strong-points fell. Worse still, because Shmuel Gonen – he was made OC Southern Command on 15 July 1973, succeeding Ariel Sharon – was told that war would start at 6 p.m., he had decided to deploy his forces at the last minute so that the Egyptians could not gain a clear picture of the layout of his forces, and could not alter their plans accordingly. But when the war started earlier than expected this proved to be a colossal error. General Gonen also made a further tactical error which proved very damaging; instead of deploying two thirds of his forces in advance positions and one third behind, he did it the other way round, and when the Egyptians opened fire the Israeli front line of defence was extremely weak. Of the 290 Israeli tanks which were in the Sinai when war broke out, 153 were soon hit and put out of action. The principal cause of the heavy loss of tanks was the way the Egyptian anti-tank guns, comparatively small and handy, were pushed out ahead of their own tanks to positions from where they could get close to the Israeli tanks and hit them.

The arrival of Israeli reserves at the front was crucial. Before the war it had been assumed that no more than 36 per cent of tanks and other vehicles would have to reach the front on treads, with the rest being carried on transporters. But so desperate was the situation and so urgent the need for more forces on the



scene, that 82 per cent of the vehicles reached the front on treads. Worse still, the IAF was unable to provide support to these forces and check the enemy, having suffered horrific damage thanks to the efficiency of the Egyptian and Syrian missile system – thirty-five Israeli planes were shot down in the first twenty-four hours of the war. Given that 52 per cent of the defence budget in 1973 was devoted to the air force, this was a most disappointing performance, for whereas in the 1967 war the most decisive factor of the Israeli success was air power, now the IAF totally failed in its mission. In the first hours of war not only did the Bar Lev line crumble, but with it the entire Israeli theory – that the regular army supported by the IAF could hold up any Arab invasion – which proved to be wishful thinking.

## FIGHTING BACK – THE GOLAN HEIGHTS

Priority had to be given to the Golan Heights, where the Israelis could not afford to yield ground because settlements were close to the border and there were no physical obstacles to hinder the advancing Syrians. Following their successful air strike, Syrian armoured forces – a first wave of 500 tanks and a later addition of 300 – crashed through the Israeli lines along the entire front and penetrated into the Golan Heights. They had concentrated their main breakthrough at two points – one north and the other south of Kuneitra. So overwhelming and massive was the Syrian assault, that although Israeli forces on the Heights had been reinforced following the air battle of 13 September, they still failed in the opening phase to stem the Syrian southern thrust, where the attackers had managed to advance towards the descent of the Jordan river and at 1 p.m. on 7 October were only some 6km from it.

On the night of 6–7 October, the Israeli General Staff had decided to send a further division to reinforce the two now on the Golan Heights; but the situation was still critical and all the

Israelis were interested in was to end the war on almost any terms. As Yisrael Tal, Deputy Chief of Staff later explained:

The aim . . . contrary to popular belief, was to put an end to the war . . . to create a situation where the Syrians think that we are moving on Damascus and call for Russian support . . . and we even decided [among ourselves] that [we will even accept that] the Egyptians remain in the [places they had already occupied in the] Sinai. [We] only [wanted] to put an end to the war . . . this is the truth.<sup>34</sup>

To achieve this aim, Chief of Staff Elazar asked for political permission to strike at the morale of the Syrian civilian population by bombing its cities and thus pressurizing the Syrian leadership into stopping the war. According to Tal: '[Chief of Staff Elazar] had insisted on bombing the population in Damascus and Haled so that the Syrians would shout *gevalt* ["help"]'.<sup>35</sup> Indeed, upon receiving political permission, the IAF, on 9 October, struck at the Syrian Defence Ministry and the Air Force Headquarters in Damascus, as well as at targets in Homs. What provided an almost miraculous reprieve to the Israelis was the fact that on that day the Syrians ran out of ground-to-air missiles and the IAF made the most of this situation. This was a successful day on the Golan Heights; as Dayan later remarked in his memoirs:

That night, 9 October, I found the mood had changed . . . there was a feeling that on that day they had passed the rock-bottom point and that the momentum of the Syrian attack had been broken. The enemy forces had begun to retreat.<sup>36</sup>

On 11 October the Israelis struck at the 40th Jordanian tank brigade – it lost twenty-seven killed and fifty wounded, and fourteen of its tanks were disabled beyond repair. The Israelis then turned on the Iraqis, hit them hard and drove back the



entire Syrian–Jordanian–Iraqi assault and retook the Golan Heights. ‘At the end of the first week of war’, noted Defence Minister Dayan in his memoirs, ‘it was the Syrians who were on the defensive, and the campaign was being fought on their soil, east of the lines through which they had broken six days earlier’.<sup>37</sup>

## THE TIDE TURNS IN THE DESERT

In the Sinai, with the arrival of the reserves, the Israelis had on the scene a total of eight armoured brigades with 960 tanks (mainly Centurion M-48s and M-60s), compared with about 1,000 on the Egyptian side (200 T-62s, 500 T-54s and the rest T-55s). On 8 October, without waiting to concentrate, the Israelis opened a major offensive which was aimed at disrupting the Egyptian military machine and wiping out the forces that had crossed the Suez Canal before they could be properly established on its eastern bank. But the outcome was a disastrous failure and the Israelis paid a heavy price in men and material for the abortive effort. This stroke has often been criticized, after the event, as a rushed job, and so in a sense it was. But then the history of war shows that a stroke of this kind has very often been successful, especially because of its demoralizing effect on the opposing troops and their commanders. But in the event, this failure turned 8 October into one of the darkest moments of the war for the Israelis, and correspondingly one of the brightest for the Egyptians. Defence Minister Dayan later wrote: ‘The day [8 October] was a total failure’,<sup>38</sup> while the Egyptian Chief of Staff el-Shazli noted with satisfaction in his war diary that

The enemy persists in throwing away the lives of their tank crews. They assault in ‘penny packet’ groupings . . . in the latest manifestation, two brigades have driven against the 16th [Egyptian] division. Once again, the attack had been stopped

with heavy losses. . . . Our strategy always has been to force the enemy to fight on our terms; but we never expected them to collaborate.<sup>39</sup>

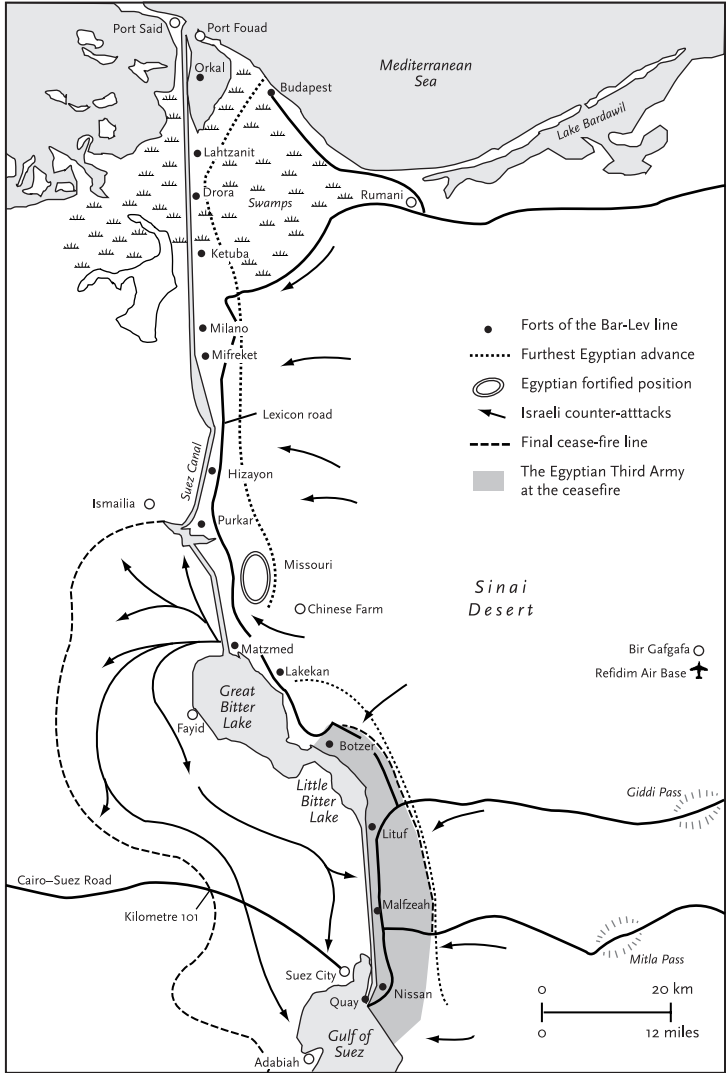
But soon the scales tilted against the Egyptians. At the beginning of the war they had enjoyed the advantage of surprise and preponderant superiority of forces, but now the Israelis were nearly fully mobilized, they had recovered their balance, were regrouping, switching forces from the Golan Heights – where hostilities had more or less ceased on 11 October – and were ready to hit back. The coming Israeli success, however, was not so much a result of superior insight or strategy rather than the result of miscalculations and shortsightedness on the Egyptian side. We should recall that the original Egyptian plan was limited – to cross the Suez Canal, move only a few kilometres into the desert, obtain a lodgement and defend it while remaining under the safe cover of the SAM missile system. But aiming at following up their initial success, and under intense pressure from Damascus to keep on fighting in order to pin down the Israelis and relieve pressure on Syria, the Egyptians decided to alter their original war plans and push deeper into the Sinai in the direction of the passes. Their Chief of Staff el-Shazli was vehemently against the sudden change of plan, since he knew that moving away from the missile umbrella would expose the troops as targets for the IAF, which still had overwhelming superiority in the air. El-Shazli pleaded as persuasively as he could with Sadat to adhere to the original limited plan, but he was overruled by Minister of War Ismail and the President himself.

At first light on 14 October, four Egyptian armoured brigades and a mechanized infantry brigade opened an offensive with four independent thrusts in the direction of the passes of Refidim, Giddi and Mitla. But as Mohamed Heikal rightly observed, 'What had been open for Egypt to accomplish on 7 October was no longer there to be achieved on 14 October'.<sup>40</sup>

Indeed, as el-Shazli predicted, the move deeper into the desert made the Egyptian troops easy prey for the IAF which, away from the missile umbrella, had command of the sky and was able to harass the advancing troops and tanks with impunity. Additionally, the Egyptian T-62 and T-54 tanks were no match for the much more advanced Israeli Centurion M-48 and M-60.

For the Israeli political-military leadership, the Egyptian offensive came just in time, for they were sharply divided and could not agree how to proceed. The practical question was one of timing and revolved around the question of *when* to move ahead and cross the Suez Canal. Chief of Staff Elazar wanted to wait, former Chief of Staff Bar Lev wanted to cross as soon as possible, and Deputy Chief of Staff Tal insisted that Israel should wait for the Egyptians to attack first, hit them from dug-in positions and only then move to the offensive and cross to the west bank of the Canal. And it was while this heated discussion was still under way that information came in that the Egyptians had opened their offensive; in practice this meant that Tal's view was accepted by default.<sup>41</sup>

In the desert, Ariel Sharon, a divisional commander, had witnessed the Egyptian offensive and its collapse, and recalling it later he wrote 'On Sunday October 14 at 06:20 massed Egyptian tank forces moved towards our lines. By early afternoon, 100–120 tanks of the Egyptian 21st armoured division were either flaming like torches or lying dead on the sand'. Indeed, the Egyptian offensive was a costly error and as disastrous as Israel's offensive on 8 October. By midday the attacking forces, which had managed to advance only a few kilometres into the desert, were brought to a complete halt and – suffering heavy losses of 250 tanks, which more than doubled their losses in the whole war to date – they began to fall back to the line from which they had started. Now the tables were turned and the Israelis took the offensive. Divisional commander Sharon recalls: 'That night approval came to cross the Canal. My division would break



Map 5 The 1973 Yom Kippur War: the Egyptian front

through the Egyptian lines, secure a corridor to the Canal and establish a crossing point at Deversoir on the east bank'.<sup>42</sup> Late on the night of 15 October, Sharon's forces approached the Suez Canal through the open seam between the Egyptian 2nd and 3rd armies and began crossing it just north of the Great Bitter Lake at Deversoir. By 18 October, Israel had on the west bank of the Canal a substantial force of three armoured brigades and an infantry brigade. By midday another armoured brigade had crossed, swelling the Israeli force to four armoured brigades and an infantry brigade. By 20 October the Israelis had secured three bridges across the Suez Canal, which enabled them to transfer more troops and tanks to the west bank.

On Monday 22 October, a ceasefire was announced, and it came into force at 6.52 p.m. But on 23 October, determined to improve their bargaining position, the Israelis breached the ceasefire and launched a concerted assault by four armoured brigades. They encircled the Egyptian 3rd army in the southern part of the Suez Canal and the town of Suez, and continued south to reach Adabiah, on the coast some ten miles below Suez. By 24 October, the 3rd army – two reinforced divisions, about 45,000 men and 250 tanks – was completely cut off, and that evening, after Soviet threats and growing American pressure, Israel agreed to a second ceasefire. It refused, however, to return to the lines of 22 October, and by now Israeli forces were within 101km of Cairo and 45km from Damascus.

In January 1974 Israel and Egypt signed disengagement agreements, and the terms of the disengagement between Israeli and Syrian troops were drafted on 31 May 1974. As Defence Minister Dayan noted in his memoirs: 'It marked the formal end to the Yom Kippur war. The fire at the front died down. The last of the prisoners came home. The Israel Defence Forces could release the reserves'.<sup>43</sup> It is estimated that the Arabs had lost some 15,600 men in the war, with 35,000 wounded and 8,700 captured. The IDF lost 2,569 men, with 7,251 wounded and



314 taken prisoner. The Arabs lost 440 aeroplanes; Israel lost 102. The Arabs lost 2,250 tanks compared with 400 Israeli tanks which were totally destroyed by enemy gunfire and 600 which were hit but were repaired and returned to full service. The Arabs lost 770 cannons; Israel lost twenty-five. Twelve Arab missile boats were sunk; the Israelis lost none.

## WAR, PEACE AND SOCIETY

The 1967 Six Day War, the 1968–70 War of Attrition and the 1973 Yom Kippur War all took place within a short period of time – six years or so. But there was a huge difference in the way the Israeli public reacted to each of these wars, and in the way each of these confrontations affected Israeli society. In 1967, the Israelis had a period of three weeks – the so-called ‘waiting period’ – in which they could assess the situation and express their views regarding the leadership and the way they were handling the crisis. When the people of Israel thought that their political leaders were not performing satisfactorily, they demanded a political change and the politicians were forced to accept it, as was the case when Dayan was nominated to the post of Defence Minister instead of Eshkol. Public reaction to the War of Attrition along the Suez Canal had its own characteristics. The war was relatively long and, as in 1967, the public had plenty of time to assess the situation and express its views regarding the way its political-military leadership was handling the crisis. Mounting public pressure forced the leadership to look for quick solutions to reduce the growing number of casualties, and this led to the construction of the Bar Lev line, and the attempt to de-escalate the war by initially intensifying it with bombing missions deep into Egypt. The Yom Kippur War of 1973 was different – it surprised the Israelis and caught them completely off their guard, and there was no time for the public to assess the situation and express its feelings. All Israelis could do was to join

their units and be mobilized to the front to repel the attackers. The aftermath of the Yom Kippur War found Israeli society in a state of deep collective shock, but as soon as the guns fell silent there came a strong public reaction which put enormous pressure on the leadership to investigate the failures which had led to Israel being caught unprepared. The Agranat Commission, which investigated the events before and during the initial phases of the war, put much of the blame on the military commanders, and although it seemed at first that the politicians would emerge unscathed, this was not to be the case. The government had misjudged the Arab threat and this, in the postwar period, led to a general re-evaluation by society of the Labour government's ability to be trusted with the state's security. Indeed, about four years after the war the Israelis voted Labour out of office and elected a Likud government headed by Menachem Begin. This, after almost thirty years of Labour rule, was more than a change of government – it was a revolution Israeli-style, and it was mainly, though not exclusively, the result of the poor performance of the Labour leadership in the period leading up to the Yom Kippur War.

If we turn to Egypt we see that the general feeling was that although in the end Egypt had lost the war, it had nevertheless won an important battle in the opening phase of hostilities, inflicting setbacks on the hitherto invincible Israelis, proving Egypt their match and regaining the nation's pride, self-respect and honour. This was good enough for President Sadat to embark on his next bold initiative and invite himself to Jerusalem to face the Israelis and offer to open a dialogue. Two years later, President Sadat and Prime Minister Begin signed the first-ever peace agreement between Israel and an Arab state. Although the price for this peace was the return of the Sinai Desert to Egypt, Israel accepted this without much protest. Ironically, however, the peace accord with Egypt, the implication of which was that the danger of Israel's being destroyed by a successful

Arab invasion became remote, further removed the very cement – that is, an acute external threat – which had kept the turbulent Israeli society together for many years and made its people willing and determined fighters. Now, with the external danger diminished, Israelis, as we shall see in the following chapter, were less willing than before to take up arms.

# 5

---

## WAR IN LEBANON

1982

### THE PARTIES INVOLVED

Israel's invasion of Lebanon in the summer of 1982 was a traumatic experience for its armed forces and for its people as a whole. To understand fully how Israel plunged into the Lebanese quagmire and became involved in such a disastrous adventure, we should first identify the main players on the Lebanese scene.

Since 1 January 1944, the day all remaining political power was transferred from the French to the Lebanese people, politics in this country had been a matter of a fragile and precarious balance between more than twelve officially recognized religious communities and sectarian groups, in particular Maronite Christians, Sunni Moslem and Shiia Moslem. Stability in Lebanon was dependent on a constitutional compromise by which a succession of Maronite Christians held the presidency, the prime minister was a Sunni Moslem and the speaker of

Parliament was a deviationist Shia Moslem. The arrival in Lebanon, from September 1970, of waves of Palestinians, mostly Moslems, had accentuated the traditional rivalry between left-leaning Moslems and rightist, mainly Maronite, Christians. These Palestinians, had, in fact, been pushed out of Jordan following failed attempts by some of its leftist groups to take over the country, which they wished to turn into a hinterland from which to attack Israel. A few of these Palestinian groups went even further by attempting to topple King Hussein, whom they considered to be a reactionary leader and the pawn of western powers in the region. In the process of trying to take over Jordan and bring down the King, the Palestinian guerrillas had turned Jordan, particularly its capital Amman, into a chaotic place; they manned road blocks, even levied taxes on thousands of Palestinian refugees, and provoked the King's loyal armed forces. 'It was a nightmarish scenario', the King later recalled, 'a breakdown of law and order; a situation where people were not able to go around without being stopped and searched by Palestinians, where vehicles were confiscated, people shot, people disappeared'.<sup>1</sup> The last straw came when Palestinians of George Habash's left-wing guerrilla group hijacked western aeroplanes, and after a stand-off in the Jordan desert blew them up. This humiliated the King, who, seeing power slipping out of his hands, turned on the Palestinian guerrillas, overcame them and expelled them from his kingdom. This is how they came to Lebanon.

There, Yasser Arafat – by now Chairman of the Palestinian Liberation Organization (PLO) – and his guerrillas settled in the south of the country, close to the border with Israel, and established their headquarters in the capital, Beirut. They also formed an alliance with the Lebanese National Movement, the LNM, which was led by the Druze leader Kamal Jumblat, and was a loose confederation of various nationalist and progressive Moslem-dominated parties, including the Arab Ba'ath Socialist

Party, the Progressive Socialist Party, the Syrian Social Nationalist Party, the Communist Party, the Communist Action Organization, the Popular Nasserist Organization and the Independent Nasserites. One of the demands of the LNM–PLO alliance was reform of the political system to make it equitable to Moslems, who now – largely because of the arrival of so many of them from Jordan – formed a majority in Lebanon. The LNM–PLO alliance was in competition with the Lebanese Front. This was a confederation of Maronite Christian political parties, including the Phalange Party, the National Liberal Party, the Guardians of the Cedars and the Maronite League. It was officially headed by Camille Chamoun, but the Gemayel clan had considerable influence and, as we shall see, Bashir Gemayel later became the strongman of this group, and in the summer of 1982 was elected President of Lebanon. While the LNM–PLO alliance demanded reform of the political system so this would better reflect its numbers within the Lebanese population, the Lebanese Front insisted that the Maronites be entitled to a special position, irrespective of them being a minority in Lebanon. However divided against itself, the Front remained united in its enmity against the LNM–PLO group.

Relationships between the two alliances were fragile, but had deteriorated dramatically following an Israeli raid on the heart of Beirut on 10 April 1973, where a commando squad led by Ehud Barak, a future prime minister of Israel, assassinated three Palestinian leaders – Kamal Nasser, Yusif Najjar and Kamal Edwan – whom the Israelis held responsible for the killing of eleven of their athletes at the Olympic Games in Munich in September 1972. The Lebanese army – composed mostly of Maronite troops – which was located in the area where the Israelis were operating, did not intervene, and this reinforced mistaken Palestinian suspicions that the Maronite leadership had tacitly approved the Israeli raid in order to weaken the Palestinians in Lebanon. With such tensions, only a spark was needed to ignite

the Lebanese powder keg, and what eventually set it off was the killing, on 13 April 1975, of four Christians by a Palestinian gunman at a church in East Beirut, which was followed, on the next day, by the killing of twenty-seven Palestinians at the Tel Zatar refugee camp by the Maronites. This train of events, which heralded the so-called Lebanese civil war, soon sucked in two regional powers – Syria and Israel.

Syrian forces were invited into Lebanon by the Maronite President Suleiman Franjieh, in order to stop the raging civil war, keep the peace and save the Lebanese Front from total defeat at the hands of the LNM–PLO alliance, which by then controlled two thirds of the country. President Assad of Syria had welcomed the invitation, for he regarded Lebanon as Syria's own back yard; he also understood that, should a war with the traditional enemy, Israel, break out, control of Lebanon could enable him to prevent Israeli troops from approaching and threatening Damascus from the rear, namely from the direction of Lebanon. On 1 June 1976, Syrian troops marched into Lebanon, deployed along the road linking Beirut and Damascus, and took positions in Beirut itself and in the Beka'a valley in eastern Lebanon. Israel, which was then led by Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin, did not object to Syrian intervention in Lebanon, but made it clear that Syrian troops must not move down beyond a line running south of Sidon to the east and 25km north of the Litani river.

Israel's involvement in the Lebanese civil war can be traced back – grotesque as it may seem – to a crucial meeting on the steps of the Magdalene Church in Paris. There, back in the early 1970s, an Israeli agent of the Mossad promised, albeit unofficially, to a Christian leader by the strange name Mugagbag, that, if asked, Israel would assist the Christians in Lebanon. This led to a meeting in 1975 between Israel's Prime Minister Rabin and the Maronite Christian leader Camille Chamoun, on board an Israeli destroyer in the Mediterranean, to discuss Israeli aid to the Maronites in Lebanon. A year later, with the civil war in Lebanon

raging and the Maronite Christian forces under growing pressure and in serious military straits, a Maronite Christian leader, Joseph Abu Khalil, approached Mugagbag, and on 12 March 1976 they set sail from Kaslik in Lebanon to the port of Haifa. Their ship was stopped at sea by an Israeli patrol boat, and after identifying themselves and explaining the purpose of their trip they were taken to Tel Aviv, where they met Israel's Defence Minister Shimon Peres. Peres asked Abu Khalil: 'Why have you come and what do you want?', to which Abu Khalil replied 'I have come to ask you for weapons. We need ammunition'.<sup>2</sup> Peres discussed the matter with Prime Minister Rabin, and they decided on a dramatic increase in material help to the Maronites in Lebanon.

It is often alleged that Israel's principal motive in offering support to the Maronites in Lebanon was sympathy and compassion. This, however, is utterly untrue; the truth of the matter is that in providing supplies and some other assistance to the Maronites Israel was perfectly serving her own national interests. First, the Maronites were fighting the PLO and other traditional enemies of Israel, and by assisting them Israel was using a proxy to do the 'dirty work' for her. Second, supporting the Maronites provided the Israelis, Mossad in particular, with a 'window' to the Arab world, which was crucial for the purposes of gathering intelligence. We should also remember that the Maronite approach came *before* Israel had signed the Camp David accords with Egypt, and that to be approached for help by the people of an Arab state – albeit Maronite Christians – was a novel experience, and a request which the Israelis found difficult to decline. With political endorsement given, Israeli boats began sailing back and forth delivering arms to the Maronites. A boat would sail into Lebanese waters towing craft heaped with weapons and ammunition, and off the coast the craft would be released for the Maronites to tow away. Arming the Maronites was a major logistical operation and, although contacts with the Maronites in



Lebanon were usually maintained by the Mossad, in this case the huge supply operation was supervised by the Israeli defence ministry. It is estimated that between 1975 and 1977 the Rabin government spent \$150 million on arming the Maronites.

## THE LITANI CAMPAIGN: A REHEARSAL FOR THE 1982 INVASION

While supplying weapons to the Maronites was no more than an indirect involvement in Lebanese affairs, a major direct intervention, which has often been regarded as a rehearsal for Israel's invasion of 1982, came in March 1978. This followed a terrorist attack at the heart of Israel, when on 11 March 1978 nine Palestinians landed on a beach in Israel, walked to the Haifa–Tel Aviv coastal road, stopped two passing buses, crammed the passengers into one bus, and at gunpoint ordered the driver to go to Tel Aviv. In an exchange of fire between the kidnappers and Israeli security forces, just north of Tel Aviv, twenty-eight Israeli passengers were killed, seventy-eight wounded, and all nine terrorists killed. The government – now headed by Menachem Begin of Likud – decided to hit back, and four days later dispatched the IDF into Lebanon to carry out what became known as 'Operation Litani'. It was launched on the night of 14 March 1978, went on for seven days, and was the biggest military operation the IDF had undertaken since the 1973 Yom Kippur War. Israeli troops, 7,000 in all, with armour and artillery and the close air support of the IAF, occupied the entire area north of the Israeli border up to the Litani river, destroying PLO infrastructure. The operation was directed against the PLO, and the Israelis kept their distance from Syrian forces in order to avoid clashing with them.

What is so significant about this operation is its link with the 1982 invasion and the way it affected the thinking of Menachem Begin, who was Israel's Prime Minister in both operations. The link was as follows. The success of the limited 'Operation Litani',

and in particular the fact that Israeli troops managed to operate without clashing with the Syrians, led Begin to believe, on the eve of the 1982 invasion, that it was possible to act in Lebanon against the PLO without having to fight the Syrians. As we shall see later, however, whereas in 1978 Defence Minister Ezer Weizman and his Chief of Staff Mordechai Gur took all possible measures to avoid a clash with the Syrians, the opposite happened in 1982, when Defence Minister Ariel Sharon, with the tacit agreement of his Chief of Staff Rafael Eitan, took direct action to provoke the Syrians and clash with them.

On 19 March, the UN Security Council adopted resolution 425 (by a vote of 12 to 0) calling on Israel to withdraw from Lebanon, and on 20 March the Council adopted resolution 426, entrusting a United Nations force, called UNIFIL, to deploy in south Lebanon and monitor the activities of the Palestinian guerrillas; on 30 June 1978, Israel agreed to pull its forces out of Lebanon (except for her 'security zone').

In the years that followed, UNIFIL failed to prevent the PLO from re-establishing itself in southern Lebanon, and there were many incidents in which the PLO and the Israelis exchanged fire. It seems, however, that in most cases it was Israel rather than the PLO which sparked the border clashes, for it was the policy of the Begin administration to keep the pressure on the PLO as a preventive measure. Begin clearly stated the aims of such an active policy, saying:

Our strategy [against the PLO in Lebanon] is not a retaliatory action [which comes] after [the other side has already] struck [at us], but the prevention of [the ability of the PLO] to hit [us] by inflicting blows on . . . the murderers in their own bases.<sup>3</sup>

Or as he once put it in a speech in Tel Aviv: 'We go out to meet [the terrorists], we penetrate into their bases . . . we no longer wait for them to come to [attack] us and spill our blood'.

With the resignation of Ezer Weizman from the defence ministry on 26 May 1980, Israel's policy in Lebanon became even tougher, for it was now designed by Begin, who was not only Prime Minister but also Defence Minister, and had as his chief adviser the no-nonsense, hawkish Chief of Staff Eitan. In the summer of 1981 in particular, Israel put enormous pressure on the PLO in southern Lebanon. On 28 May, for instance, although unprovoked, the IAF began a massive bombing campaign against PLO bases in southern Lebanon; the PLO reaction was cautious and restrained. On 10 July 1981, the IAF struck again, this time in and around Beirut, killing 100 – thirty of them guerrillas – and wounding 600. Now the PLO lashed back, massively shelling Israeli settlements in Galilee, killing six Israelis and wounding thirty-eight. Israel then hit back in turn by launching a massive bombardment and causing Palestinians and Shiite civilians to flee northwards, and 70 per cent of the population of the Israeli town of Kiryat Shmona to flee southward. To stop the vicious circle, American President Ronald Reagan dispatched his special emissary Philip Habib, who with the help of the Saudi government, managed to broker a ceasefire between Israel and the PLO. Begin refused to call the Habib agreement a 'ceasefire' because it implied that Israel was apparently negotiating with the PLO. He called it 'An agreement to stop terrorist acts from Lebanon to Israel'. But a ceasefire it indeed was and this came into effect on 24 July 1981 and led to comparative peace along the border between Israel and Lebanon.

## ARIEL SHARON AND THE 'LEBANESE PROBLEM'

After Menachem Begin was re-elected Prime Minister for a second term, on 30 June 1981, he admitted Ariel ('Arik') Sharon, a man of great physical bulk and tremendous energy and toughness, into his cabinet as Defence Minister. It is often alleged that Begin's invitation to Sharon was due to the Prime Minister's

admiration for generals – and Sharon was definitely one of the best soldiers Israel ever had. But there is, perhaps, a more convincing reason why Begin wanted Sharon in his cabinet, and this relates to Israel's relations with Egypt.

We should remember that according to the Camp David accords, signed between Israel and Egypt back in 1978, Israel had to return the Sinai to Egypt – a final withdrawal was due by 25 April 1982. Begin, so it seems, could not bear the thought that he, of all people, would have to clash with Jewish settlers in Sinai over the dismantling of their villages and townships and the return of the land to Egypt. Instead, he preferred to leave this unpleasant task to Sharon who, he believed, could carry out the evacuation smoothly because he was regarded as the champion of the settlers' cause, and was also deeply involved in the building of many of the settlements in Sinai. But ironically, while Begin brought Sharon into his cabinet because of Egypt, Sharon – who lobbied hard for the job of Defence Minister – wished to join the cabinet mainly because of Lebanon, where he recognized two principal problems which he was determined to tackle and resolve. One was the presence of the Syrians and their ground-to-air missile system in the Beka'a valley; the other was the presence of the PLO in Lebanon.

In the entry of Syrian troops into Lebanon, which was approved by Prime Minister Rabin against the advice of Sharon, who at the time served as Rabin's adviser, Sharon saw 'the root of the [Lebanese problem]'.<sup>4</sup> He felt that Rabin's tacit agreement to the Syrian march into Lebanon of June 1976 was a grave error of judgement because it had allowed the Syrians to strengthen their grip – politically and militarily – on Lebanon. Sharon saw a great danger in the Syrian missile system in eastern Lebanon, which had been established – due to Israel's short-sighted policies – in the Beka'a valley in 1981. This is how it came about: on 28 April of that year, the Maronites attempted to take Zahle, mostly Christian, by force. But the Syrians would not allow this because they

regarded the Maronites' attempt as an effort to extend their influence to eastern Lebanon. When the Syrians intervened to stop the Maronites, the latter called for help, and Israel dispatched aircraft which promptly shot down two Syrian helicopters, killing all the troops on board. It is often alleged that the principal motive of the Maronites in their attempt to take Zahle, was to provoke the Syrians and thus draw Israel deeper into Lebanese affairs. This is hard to prove, although Prime Minister Begin did promise Camille Chamoun and Bashir Gemayel, when they visited him at his house in Jerusalem, that if the Syrians attacked from the air the IAF would come to their rescue.<sup>5</sup> In any case, if what the Maronites really wished to do was bring in the Israelis, then they succeeded, and indeed managed to complicate matters for Israel. For soon after the shooting-down of the Syrian helicopters, Damascus introduced SAM-6 batteries into the Beka'a valley to ensure that never again would the Israelis be able to intervene so aggressively in eastern Lebanon. The Syrian move was regarded in Israel as a serious development, for it reduced the freedom of action of the IAF over Lebanese land. Acting on the advice of Chief of Staff Eitan, who was supported by the commander of the IAF, the Israeli cabinet authorized the IAF to destroy the Syrian missile system. But this did not take place, for a strike which was planned for 30 April was called off because of poor weather conditions, and later the operation was put off again because the IAF was preparing to strike at Iraq's Osirak nuclear reactor south of Baghdad, which happened on 7 June 1981. Thus, when Sharon became Defence Minister, and on the eve of the 1982 war in Lebanon, the Syrian missile system was still in place.

Sharon believed that the PLO was attempting to turn the land of Lebanon – as it had tried to do in Jordan – into a base to strike at Israel. He was not impressed with the ceasefire brokered by Habib – it was holding well – and he argued that the PLO was taking advantage of the ceasefire to rearm and organize itself.

Furthermore, Sharon, like others in Likud, strongly believed that the destruction of the PLO in Lebanon would shatter Arafat's influence among the inhabitants of the West Bank. He said: 'Quiet on the West Bank requires the destruction of the PLO in Lebanon',<sup>6</sup> and one of his colleagues, the then Foreign Minister Yitzhak Shamir, said: 'The defence of the West Bank starts in West Beirut'.<sup>7</sup>

These two problems – the Syrian and the PLO presence in Lebanon – were so interconnected that it was impossible, in Sharon's view, to deal with each of them separately, and this led him to the conclusion that

Even if [Israel] wanted only to remove the terrorists (namely the PLO, from Lebanon), it had to take into consideration that the response of the Syrians would compel [it] to deal also with them – and this meant first of all [destroying] their missile [system].<sup>8</sup>

This is a most significant statement, for it shows that Sharon was well aware that if he were to order the IDF into Lebanon to root out the PLO – as thoroughly as he thought would be necessary – then the chances were high that Israeli troops would clash with Syrian troops stationed there. As we shall soon see, when he attempted to persuade the cabinet to endorse military action in Lebanon, Sharon would neglect to tell ministers that the implication of such an invasion was a high likelihood of a clash with the Syrians.

## SHARON AND THE ROAD TO WAR

On 20 December 1981, about four months after being appointed Defence Minister, Sharon presented to ministers his plans for a military operation – it was not yet called a war – against the PLO. This was the first time ministers had been told

of an intention to operate in Lebanon, and it took them completely by surprise. The cabinet's overriding concern was that an attempt to destroy the PLO in Lebanon might lead to a clash with Syrian troops stationed there, which might, in turn, get out of hand and turn into a full-blown war between Israel and Syria on the Golan Heights. However, at this stage there was no vote on Sharon's proposal, and the cabinet did not have to commit itself to anything definitive; even if ministers were facing a dilemma they could delay any decision until the issue became imminent.

Sharon also began a campaign designed to prepare the American administration for the possibility of an Israeli invasion of Lebanon. Washington was, after all, Israel's most reliable ally, and it must not be faced with a *fait accompli*. In December, at more or less the same time as he presented the operational plans to the Israeli cabinet, Sharon also presented it, though in broad terms only, to the Americans. He invited US Special Ambassador Morris Draper, together with Philip Habib, President Reagan's envoy to the Middle East, to a meeting in Tel Aviv, and explained to them that Israel could not tolerate the shelling of its settlements from south Lebanon. He warned that 'if the terrorists continue to attack us we will wipe them out completely in Lebanon'. Habib reacted furiously to this statement, telling Sharon: 'This is madness. . . . The PLO isn't carrying out many raids. There is no need for such an Israeli reaction. We are living in the twentieth century . . . you can't just invade a country like this'.<sup>9</sup> The evidence shows that Habib was right; the ceasefire he had brokered in Lebanon was more or less holding, and the PLO was keeping a low profile, perhaps because it knew that Sharon was looking for a pretext to strike at them. But to Sharon this seemed irrelevant and in a further meeting, this time in Washington on 25 May 1982, he repeated the same line of thought to the upper echelons of the State Department. In an eyeball-to-eyeball meeting at the State Department, US Secretary of Defence Alexander Haig warned Sharon: 'This is unsatisfactory . . . nothing should

be done in Lebanon without an internationally recognized provocation, and the Israeli reaction should be proportionate to that provocation'.<sup>10</sup> It is hard to say whether Haig meant to warn Sharon not to strike, or whether, in fact, he was hinting that under certain conditions Washington would accept an Israeli invasion of Lebanon. For how does one define an 'internationally recognized provocation'? And the same applies to Haig's warning that the Israeli response should be 'proportionate' – for how does one judge what 'proportionate' is? The possible interpretations are simply endless. It seems that Haig did realize that his remark to Sharon was too open-ended, for after the meeting he found it necessary to send a personal letter to Prime Minister Begin (dated 28 May) where he said that he 'hoped there was no ambiguity on the extent of [Washington's] concern about possible future Israeli military actions in Lebanon . . . [which] regardless of size, could have consequences none of us could foresee'. To this Begin replied: 'Mr Secretary, my dear friend, the man has not yet been born who will ever obtain from me consent to let Jews be killed by a bloodthirsty enemy'.<sup>11</sup>

## SEARCHING FOR A PRETEXT

With Washington effectively allowing Israel to act in Lebanon, given an 'internationally recognized provocation', the Israelis were now looking for one. On 3 April an agent of the Mossad, Ya'akov Bar-Siman-Tov, was shot dead in Paris, and a proposal to invade Lebanon in order to strike at the PLO was made at a meeting of the cabinet on 11 April 1982; five ministers opposed such an operation and Prime Minister Begin decided to put it on hold. Then, on 21 April, an artillery officer was killed in Lebanon and two others were injured when their vehicle hit a mine. In retaliation, the IAF struck at the PLO in Lebanon, killing twenty-three, and the PLO hit back (on 9 May) with rockets and projectiles. But what was so significant about the PLO response



was that not one Israeli village, kibbutz or settlement was hit, which seems to indicate that the PLO was signalling: We're avoiding hitting Israeli civilian centres, but we are capable of doing so and if provoked sufficiently, we shall do so. Yet this signal was either misunderstood by the Israelis, or they preferred not to see it this way, and the next day (10 May) Begin asked his cabinet to authorize the invasion of Lebanon by the IDF. This time eleven out of Begin's eighteen ministers were in favour, and 17 May was fixed as the provisional date; but then, with seven of his ministers still resisting, Begin called the operation off just one day before it was due to start. It is interesting to note here that a day before his decision to call off the operation, Begin had received a message from Yasser Arafat via Brian Urquhart, Assistant Under-Secretary General of the UN, in which Arafat told Begin:

I have learnt more from you as a resistance leader than from anyone else about how to combine politics and military tactics . . . you of all people must understand that it is not necessary to face me on the battlefield. Do not send a military force against me. Do not try to break me in Lebanon. You will not succeed.<sup>12</sup>

Incongruously enough, the incident that eventually brought war took place neither in Lebanon nor in Israel, but in London. On 3 June 1982, Palestinian gunmen of the Abu Nidal group shot the Israeli Ambassador to London, Shlomo Argov, and seriously injured him. There was no reason intrinsically why such an incident should turn into a *casus belli* and necessitate a massive Israeli invasion to wipe out the PLO in Lebanon, especially given that Abu Nidal was a sworn enemy of the PLO and its leader Arafat, whom he often dubbed 'the Jewess' son' and had even sent his people to assassinate him. But such was the mood in Israel following the attempt on the life of the Ambassador, that hardly any minister seemed to care that the assassins were from

the Abu Nidal dissident group, and they were willing to accept the view expressed by the Chief of Staff and the Prime Minister that it did not matter which group had attempted to assassinate the Ambassador, and that Israel needed 'to strike at the PLO'.

Thus, at its meeting on 4 June, which was a Friday, the cabinet instructed the IAF to strike at PLO targets in Lebanon. It is conceivable that those ministers and military advisers who favoured an all-out invasion assumed – rightly as we shall soon see – that the PLO would retaliate, and that this, in conjunction with the attempt on the life of the Ambassador, would provide Israel with the long-awaited pretext to invade.

That day at 3.15 p.m., Israeli aircraft took off from bases in Israel and a few minutes later struck at nine PLO targets – the sports centre in Beirut, which was a training camp and a military school, and another seven targets in south Beirut – this was a massive air bombardment on sensitive targets. When this happened Yasser Arafat was not in Lebanon, but in Jeddah, on a mediating mission to end the Iran–Iraq war, which demonstrates how much the Israeli invasion came as a total surprise to him in spite of evidence that the Israelis were planning a massive attack. In the absence of Arafat, his deputy Abu Jihad – the Israelis would later assassinate him – took the decision to hit back, and for twenty-four hours the PLO shelled Israeli settlements in Galilee. With the situation in Lebanon deteriorating by the hour, the Israeli cabinet convened on Saturday 5 June at Begin's residence in Jerusalem, and with almost universal support authorized a military invasion of Lebanon, to which it gave the innocent-sounding name 'Operation Peace for Galilee'; it would later be called 'The War of Lebanon'. The following is resolution no. 676 of the cabinet, authorizing the invasion:

- (a) The IDF is entrusted with the mission of freeing all the Galilee settlements from the range of fire of terrorists, their Headquarters and bases concentrated in Lebanon. (b) The

operation is called 'Peace for Galilee'. (c) During the implementation of the decision the Syrian army should not be attacked unless it attacks our forces. (d) The State of Israel continues to strive to sign a peace treaty with independent Lebanon, while maintaining its territorial integrity.

In this resolution the depth of penetration into Lebanon is not specified, but during the cabinet discussion, Defence Minister Sharon made it clear that the operation's objective was to remove the 'terrorists' from firing range of Israel's northern border, 'approximately 45 kilometres'. Beirut, the Lebanese capital, also seemed not to be included in the invasion. Indeed, replying to a query raised by minister Simcha Ehrlich, Sharon said that Beirut was 'out of the picture'. The evidence clearly shows that what the cabinet ministers had in mind was a Litani-type operation, namely a short and small-scale invasion directed against the PLO only. As Foreign Minister Shamir later wrote in his memoirs: 'Operation Peace for Galilee . . . was intended to last no more than forty-eight hours, to penetrate Lebanon to a maximum depth of some forty kilometres and to destroy the PLO'.<sup>13</sup>

## THE ISRAELI MILITARY PLAN AND THE OPPOSING FORCES ON THE EVE OF THE INVASION

### **The IDF**

There is much confusion in the literature regarding Israel's military aims and operational plans in Lebanon. This is understandable, for it is a confusion which springs from the gap between the real operational plans as prepared and known to the military, and the false impression given by Defence Minister Sharon to the Israeli cabinet. There was, contrary to popular belief, only one operational plan for invasion, and this was called 'Big Pines

Operation'. It envisaged a deep penetration of troops into Lebanon up to the Beirut–Damascus road – certainly beyond Sharon's '45 kilometres' – destroying the PLO infrastructure, linking up with Maronite Christian troops in the outskirts of Beirut and expelling the PLO from Lebanon, including Beirut. This plan had two versions, one which was known as 'Small Pines Operation' and the other 'Rolling Pines Operation', both of which envisaged a temporary limited penetration into Lebanon.<sup>14</sup> The reason why these operational plans were drawn up is that it was not clear to the military planners whether, when a decision to invade had been made by the cabinet, there would be sufficient forces at jump-off points to execute 'Big Pines Operation'. Therefore, it was planned that if and when political authorization to invade was given, the invasion would start immediately with the available forces implementing either 'Small Pines' or 'Rolling Pines' (the difference between the two was marginal) and then, with the arrival and accumulation of more forces, the operation would expand to complete the implementation of 'Big Pines Operation'. In other words, the idea of the military planners was that even without all forces in jump-off positions, a small invasion would start and then develop into a broader operation which would bring the Israelis to Beirut. Sharon confirmed, after the war, that this was indeed the case, explaining that 'the two versions of Pines [Small and Rolling]' were to lead up to the 'big operational plan in stages' and the 'intention of Pines in all the versions [was to bring about] the destruction of the terrorism infrastructure and the occupation of Beirut'.<sup>15</sup>

Unlike the Israeli ministers, who thought in terms of a limited Litani-style campaign in which troops would only penetrate to a depth of 40–45km into Lebanon, the military planners always knew the way in which Sharon's mind was working and that he intended to get to Beirut. This they had learnt from Sharon himself, who told them, on a visit to Lebanon in February 1982, that there was no point in any action in Lebanon unless it was a

thorough one, and no action against the PLO would be thorough unless it drove the PLO out of Beirut.<sup>16</sup> Later in this visit Sharon met Maronite leaders, to whom he said that when Israeli troops arrived in Beirut, 'we are asking you for two things. One to participate militarily in the Beirut battle, and second to sign a peace treaty with Israel'.<sup>17</sup> This suggestion was rejected out of hand by the older Maronite leaders attending, Pierre Gemayel and Camille Chamoun, but not by the young Bashir Gemayel. But, as we shall later see, when Bashir Gemayel was in a position to take part in operations in Beirut, he did sit around letting the Israelis do the job alone. That Sharon's hidden agenda was intended from the very start to go all the way to Beirut also became apparent in a crucial meeting with military commanders on 4 May 1982, when he explained that the solution to the problems caused by the PLO 'lies only in an action that will bring about the actual destruction [of the PLO], destruction of [its] military power, [its] military command posts, and [its] political command centres in Beirut'. At the end of the day, Sharon told his commanders, 'we will get [to Beirut]'.<sup>18</sup>

So, ironically, the Israeli operational plan to penetrate deep into Lebanon and reach Beirut was known to the Israeli commanders and to the Maronite leadership, but not to the Israeli ministers, to whom Sharon said that 'Beirut is out of the picture' and that the intention was to penetrate no more than 45km north of the Israeli border. Furthermore, even the Syrians knew more about Israel's real intentions in Lebanon than most Israeli ministers did, for after the February meeting with Sharon, and through the mediation of Colonel Jonny Abdo, the Lebanese Chief of Military Intelligence, Bashir Gemayel, contacted the Syrian intelligence chief Mohammed Rahnim, telling him that the Israelis 'are preparing to invade Lebanon'. He then gave Rahnim full details of his talks with Sharon. Furthermore, the PLO in Lebanon knew well before the Israeli ministers did that Sharon was planning a massive operation, penetrating well beyond

45km into Lebanon. For again, after the February meeting with Sharon, Gemayel, through the offices of Jonny Abdo, met Hani Hassan, a leading Palestinian and one of Arafat's closest colleagues, to whom he said 'I have information about a possible Israeli invasion that could reach as far as Beirut'. When Hassan said 'Our information is that the invasion will stop at Sidon', Gemayel replied, 'Don't bet on a limited invasion – expect a bigger one. The aim is to get you out of Lebanon'.<sup>19</sup>

The Israeli invasion was planned as a four-pronged attack of armour, mobile infantry and supporting units. Lebanon, because of its winding, undulating terrain and narrow mountain roads, is a very difficult country to invade because forces can hardly support each other. That is why Israeli planners envisaged an invasion in which forces operated in widely separated areas rather than in combination, namely a western theatre of war (along the coast and up to Beirut), an eastern sector (along the Beka'a and confronting the Syrians) and a central sector (forces 'sandwiched' between the western and eastern sectors).

The spearhead of the western force was to be the 211th armoured brigade, commanded by Colonel Eli Geva. Its task was to sweep along the coastal road, bypass highly populated areas and head on to Beirut. It was to be followed by the 91st division under the command of Brigadier-General Yitzhak Mordechai, which was to mop up towns and camps and keep the narrow road to the north open; and by other forces coming from east and west, namely Brigadier-General Avigdor Kahalani's 36th division coming from the central sector, and Brigadier-General Amos Yaron's 96th division and elements of the 35th parachute brigade landing from sea. In the central sector, Brigadier-General Menachem Einar's 162nd division was to advance northwards through the Shouf mountains in the direction of the Beirut–Damascus road in an attempt to cut off Syrian forces in Beirut from those in the east.

In the eastern sector of Lebanon, two divisions under the

overall command of Major-General Avigdor 'Yanoush' Ben Gal and his deputy Ehud Barak were charged with facing the main Syrian body in the Beka'a valley. It was envisaged that upon orders, forces in this sector would move northeast along the slopes of the Hermon Mountain in the direction of the Beka'a Valley and compel, as Sharon put it, 'a certain Syrian withdrawal'. All Israeli forces in Lebanon were subordinated to the Northern Command, which was headed by Major-General Amir Drori. On the eve of the invasion, a substantial force of about 57,000 men and more than 1,000 tanks was assembled in jump-off positions ready to implement 'Big Pines Operation'; of these 22,000 men and 220 tanks were to carry out operations in the western sector (forces heading to Beirut), and about 35,000 men and 800 tanks to face the Syrians and fight them if attacked or if so ordered. Additionally, the entire IAF was ready to provide air cover and support to the forces operating in Lebanon.

### **The Syrians and the PLO**

On the eve of the Israeli invasion, the Syrian force in Lebanon comprised some 30,000 men, 612 tanks, 150 armoured personnel carriers (APCs), and 300 pieces of artillery and anti-tank guns; additional forces were to join when the Israeli invasion began. Syrian forces were deployed in the Beka'a valley under the protection of a missile system, along the Beirut–Damascus road, and in Beirut itself, where they were organized in the independent 85th brigade. The Syrians had no offensive intentions in Lebanon, and did not wish to clash with the Israelis unless attacked.

PLO forces on the eve of the Israeli invasion comprised some 15,000 combatants and an additional militia which was recruited from among Palestinian refugees. These forces were organized in brigades and divisions, although they seldom operated in large units and preferred small guerrilla-style units. Of

these, the Kastel brigade comprised 6,000 combatants, deployed in the area of Sidon (Ein el-Hilwe camp), Tyre (Rachidya and el-Bass camps) and Nabatiya. The Yarmuk brigade comprised 6,000 combatants and was deployed in the area south of the Lebanon Mountain, and the Karameh brigade of 1,500 combatants or so was deployed within the Syrian positions in the area of Hasbaiya and Rachaiya. Most of the headquarters of the various Palestinian organizations were situated in Beirut, where there were also some 6,000 combatants. The PLO forces were equipped with 100 tanks (T-34s, T-54s and T-55s), 350 pieces of artillery, 150 half tracks, more than 200 anti-tank guns and more than 200 anti-aircraft guns.

## THE WAR

### **The race for Beirut**

The Israeli cabinet's decision to authorize the IDF to invade Lebanon put an end to the long waiting, and on the morning of 6 June the race for Beirut was under way. The Israeli attack started promisingly. Armoured columns led by the 211th brigade crossed the Israeli-Lebanese border at Rosh Hanikra, bypassed Tyre (at 2 p.m.) and crossed the Litani river over the Kasmia bridge (at 4 p.m.). Early that day, an amphibious force of the 96th division sailed from the ports of Ashdod and Haifa northward to land and join forces on their way to Beirut. Since the landing location was not yet fixed, commanders were kept together on board the cruiser *Geula*, and when the order came (at 9 p.m.) to land at the mouth of the Aouali river, they were sent back by small boats to join their forces at sea. The landing, which brought ashore a mixed force of tanks, APCs and four self-propelled 155mm guns, began at 11 p.m., with a marine commando unit taking positions and securing the beach against any hostile reception. After the landing, the force dug in, prepared to



stay overnight, and continued to absorb reinforcements which arrived during the night; it then started moving towards Damour on the way to Beirut. On the morning of 7 June, Kahalani's 36th division, coming cross-country from the central sector, linked up with the coastal column, encircled Sidon and besieged the Ein el-Hilwe camp outside the town. On 9 June the advance to Beirut continued, and on 10 June the 211th armoured brigade reached Kefar Sil, just south of the capital. There it was checked and met stiff resistance from a PLO force. This was overcome after an infantry force had been brought up to clear the way. After capturing Kefar Sil, the column resumed its advance until it reached the southern tip of Beirut's international airport.

While the advance along the coast continued, the 35th para-troop brigade, which had been landed at the Aouali river on the first night of the invasion, was advancing through the mountains in an attempt to link up, as planned, with the Maronites just outside Beirut in Baabda; the link-up was achieved on 13 June. For the next two weeks Israeli forces continued to push north and encircle Beirut, and by 1 July the capital, which Sharon had told the cabinet was 'out of the picture', was very much in the picture and under siege. PLO guerrillas, 500,000 Palestinians, Moslem Lebanese civilians and the 85th Syrian brigade, were all encircled. The siege would last seventy days.

### **Fighting the Syrians**

In the 1978 Litani campaign, as has been shown, Israeli troops operating in the Lebanon did not clash with Syrian forces. This was mainly because special precautions were taken by the Israelis not to provoke the Syrians in any way. Thus troop movements were always away from the Syrians, neither in their direction nor under their noses, and messages were transmitted to Damascus that the operation was limited and aimed only against the PLO.



But now it was all different. Sharon, as we have already explained, considered the Syrian presence in Lebanon and its missile system in the Beka'a valley to be an immense problem for Israel, and although he understood that the cabinet was unlikely to approve an operation against the Syrians, he was nevertheless determined to make the most of the situation and provoke the Syrians to shoot first, in which case Israeli troops would be free to hit back – and hard.

General Avigdor ('Yanoush') Ben Gal, a veteran military commander who had distinguished himself in the Yom Kippur War and was now the overall commander of the eastern front, later explained to the author that it was clear to him and his colleagues that they were heading for a direct confrontation with the Syrians in Lebanon. If one looks at 'the structure and composition of the force', Ben Gal explained, 'one realizes a priori that [Israel had intended] to fight against a regular Syrian army . . . there was a force with a lot of artillery . . . combat helicopters . . . and hundreds of tanks'.<sup>20</sup> And as General Amir Drori, OC Northern Command, later testified: 'the big question was whether or not the Syrians would intervene . . . and it was clear to us that they would [intervene]'.<sup>21</sup> A war game called *Shoshanim* ('Roses'), which took place on 8 March 1982 to test the operational plans, showed that, without any doubt, Israeli forces would clash with the Syrians in Lebanon. Such high probability of a battle with the Syrians in Lebanon was frequently discussed in meetings between Defence Minister Sharon and the military. For instance, on 4 May 1982 at the HQ of Northern Command, military commanders warned Sharon – who was perhaps the ablest strategist among them and certainly understood what they meant – that the present composition of Israeli forces and their operational plans was sure to lead to a clash with the Syrians. The commanders' comments were professional in character, namely that the advance of substantial Israeli forces near the Syrian–Lebanese border in the direction of the Beirut–Damascus road

and just under the noses of Syrian guns, as well as the concentration of a large number of Israeli troops close to the town of Jezzín, where Syrian forces were stationed, would certainly result in military contact with the Syrians. Sharon, however, does not seem to have sought guidance from his generals – he had already decided his policy and thus rejected any alteration of the plans. For his overriding, though hidden, aim, as we have already explained, was to clash with the Syrians, and he was determined to provoke them. For Sharon, the war which cabinet ministers regarded as aimed at breaking the back of the PLO was also an opportunity to confront the Syrians in Lebanon.

As his military commanders had predicted – and as Sharon probably hoped – between 8 and 11 June Israeli and Syrian forces clashed in Lebanon. This confrontation had four crucial and significant turning points. First was the battle in Jezzín, which signalled the beginning of the Israeli–Syrian engagement; second was the battle in Ein Zhalata, which signalled the failure of the Israeli attempt to ‘push’ the Syrians – to use Sharon’s jargon – out of the Beka’a without confronting them head-on; third was the head-on offensive against the Syrians; and fourth, finally, was the destruction of their missile system in the Beka’a.

After crossing into Lebanon on the first day of the war, the advancing Israeli forces in the eastern sector moved towards the Hasbaiya area where, at around noon, the Syrians opened fire. When this happened Sharon issued instructions to Chief of Staff Eitan to prepare forces for the central sector to move north and outflank the Syrians; he gave this order without consulting the cabinet, but it seems he was confident that he could get its backing. At a late-night meeting of the cabinet in Jerusalem, Sharon reported: ‘At noon the Syrians opened artillery fire without being fired at, from [their] heavy D-30 cannons from their emplacements, on our . . . forces and we sustained several casualties’.<sup>22</sup> To overcome this resistance, Sharon – his mind always teemed with original ideas, and he could sustain these with

technical arguments – proposed that ministers choose between two options: either a frontal assault against the Syrian forces, which he knew the cabinet would not want to approve and probably preferred them not to, or ‘An advance [of Israeli forces] to the north in an attempt [to outflank] and confront the rear of the Syrians’, which he rightly assumed would be seen as the lesser of two evils and as a result would be the ministers’ preferred option.<sup>23</sup> A third option, which was simply not to take any action, for after all the cabinet did not wish any confrontation with the Syrians in Lebanon, was never put forward. As for the second option, namely the outflanking move, this was favoured by the Prime Minister, who swung his weight in support of it and praised it as ‘Hannibal’s manoeuvre’, so leading his cabinet to endorse it (resolution 690). The cabinet was not, however, aware of two crucial facts which Sharon had failed to mention; first, that in order to implement the proposed plan forces would have to pass through the emplacement of Jezzín, a critical strategic point which was held by a Syrian infantry battalion and an armoured force of T-55s and which, on the night of 6 June, was reinforced by another infantry battalion and commandos. Second, that an outflanking manoeuvre would not necessarily induce the Syrians to withdraw, rather it might compel them to dig in and fight in an attempt to prevent the advancing Israelis from reaching the Beirut–Damascus road, thus cutting off the bulk of Syrian troops in Beirut from those in Damascus and the Beka’a valley. The decision of the cabinet was executed by the 162nd division, and led to a fierce clash with Syrian forces in Jezzín on 8 June. Calling up reinforcements, the Syrians fought back in fury and inflicted serious casualties on the Israelis. In the end, however, they gave way and the Israelis took Jezzín.

But soon the battle took a turn for the worse, and the whole outlook in the eastern section of Lebanon changed dramatically when a force of the 162nd Israeli division ran into a Syrian trap and was checked at a place called Ein Zhalata. This was

significant, because it meant that the force whose task was to outflank the Syrians could no longer proceed with its mission. Sharon, with his 'Hannibal manoeuvre' bogged down, decided to recast his plan and ordered, at a meeting with commanders on the morning of 9 June, that Ben Gal's forces move northwards, as soon and as fast as possible, and destroy the Syrian 1st division which was just coming down from Syria as a reinforcement. This, in military terms, meant giving up the attempt to 'push' the Syrians by an outflanking manoeuvre, and instead confronting them head-on. The commanders who had attended the meeting with Sharon and understood that the implications of the Defence Minister's instruction were an all-out head-on offensive against the Syrians, resisted. Yekutiel Adam, a former deputy chief of staff – he would later be killed in a PLO ambush – stood up and bluntly asked Sharon whether his order did not contradict the objectives set by the cabinet not to attack the Syrians. Sharon disregarded this challenge, overruled Adam, who gave way in face of Sharon's force of personality and position, and went on to instruct General Ben Gal to go ahead with the mission.

With the 162nd division bogged down in Ein Zhalata and Ben Gal's forces moving straight towards the Syrians, a new problem emerged: the Syrian missile 'umbrella' which hindered the IAF from providing air support to the ground forces. It is often alleged that Sharon now saw an opportunity to strike at the missile system under the pretext of aiding the troops on the ground. Indeed, in a cabinet meeting on Wednesday 9 June, Sharon proposed destroying the missile system, marshalling all his arguments for taking this step. The Prime Minister was in favour – this Sharon already knew for he had discussed it with him previously – but other ministers had qualms about the proposed operation, fearing that it might escalate the war even further. When ministers expressed tentative reservations Sharon forced their hand by arguing that bombing the missile system

was essential to 'minimize Israeli casualties', for devoid of air support they would be exposed to enemy fire. This argument had its effect, and when the old, wise and experienced Minister of the Interior Dr Yosef Burg agreed to support the operation, Sharon knew that he had won over the cabinet. He passed a note to Amos Amir, Deputy Commander of the IAF, who was present at the meeting. 'Amos', it went, 'I ride horses [and I know, that] when you jump over obstacles the highest obstacle is the most difficult. [Minister] Burg has been the highest obstacle and we have overcome it . . . Arik', Amos Amir to author, Tel Aviv, 27 February 1997; also Dr Yosef Burg to author, Jerusalem, 18 March 1991.

This major operation against the Syrian missile system in the Beka'a was delivered that day at 2 p.m. by ninety-six F-15 and F-16 aircraft which, in a most efficient strike and within two and a half hours, knocked out seventeen of nineteen Syrian batteries and severely damaged the remaining two, which were also knocked out in a renewed attack on the next day. In the course of this assault, the Syrian air force intervened and lost ninety-six Migs without any cost to the Israelis. This was a sensational triumph for the IAF, one which can be compared only with its successes on the morning of 5 June 1967, when it had destroyed almost the entire Egyptian air force on the ground, or its successful bombing of the Iraqi nuclear reactor on 7 June 1981. Following this massive air strike, Israeli forces on the ground embarked on an all-out assault against the 1st and 3rd Syrian armoured divisions, attacking them along the entire line, particularly east and west of Lake Karoun.

On 11 June, a ceasefire between Israel and Syria in the eastern sector of Lebanon came into effect; at this stage the Syrians still held the Beirut–Damascus road, but later, on Sharon's instructions, Israeli troops crept forwards and captured it. Thus, with the fight against the Syrians in Lebanon over, Sharon could congratulate himself on having achieved his hidden agenda.

Although his colleagues had opposed any clash with the Syrians in Lebanon, he had managed to provoke the Syrians, and when they opened fire his forces had hit back and dislodged them from their positions. Moreover, by capturing the Beirut–Damascus road Sharon had effectively cut off the Syrians in Beirut from the bulk of their forces in the eastern part of Lebanon, a move which was crucial in order to tighten the noose on Beirut. And perhaps most important of all, he had managed to persuade the cabinet to approve a major air strike against the Syrian missile system and subsequently succeeded in destroying it.

### **Beirut under siege**

The battle with the Syrians was short and decisive, but this was not to be the case in Beirut, where Arafat and his men dug in and became inextricably mingled with the civilian population, rather than leaving Beirut as the Israelis wished them to do. Bashir Gemayel – by now the undisputed Maronite Christian leader in Lebanon – was adamant in refusing to send his men into Beirut to clear it of the PLO. Even the daring Sharon would not send troops into an Arab capital to conduct bitter street-fighting with the PLO. And thus with few options left, Sharon ordered his military command to tighten the siege on Beirut, to bomb areas where the PLO was hiding, and to take other measures such as cutting off water and electricity supplies and stopping food from reaching the population. The line of thought behind this brutal policy was that, if pressed hard enough, the people and government of Beirut would eventually demand Arafat's departure in order to save themselves from further hardships. So while the IAF bombed relentlessly, and guns poured salvo upon salvo into West Beirut, Israeli troops were tightening the noose around the Palestinian areas. On 3 July they seized the green line separating East and West Beirut, and took control of the Museum



checkpoint in Gallery Samaan. This meant that West Beirut was totally sealed off from its eastern counterpart. On 4 July the Israelis cut off all food, water and fuel supplies and took over Beirut's international airport. At a meeting in Tel Aviv on 11 July, Sharon instructed the air force to hit 'terrorist camps' in the south of Beirut which, as Sharon put it, 'must be destroyed, razed to the ground'. More than 500 buildings were targeted, and destroyed from the air or by artillery, with naval vessels offshore joining the battle by launching missiles into West Beirut.

But not all went well, for as the war dragged on, the number of casualties mounted and plans to enter Beirut were being drawn up, opposition to Sharon began to grow within the ranks of the IDF. Around mid-July, the commander of the 211st armoured brigade, who had led the Israeli column along the coastal axis up to Beirut, told Sharon 'this is not our fight . . . we must not let ourselves be dragged into Lebanon's internal affairs'.<sup>24</sup> He then took the unusual step of leaving his brigade while the war was still in progress, and was later relieved of his command. This was a significant event, for never before in Israel's military history had a commander of this rank abandoned his troops and, more than anything, it came to reflect a growing uneasiness among the rank and file. It was indeed bad news for Sharon (officially Defence Minister but effectively super-chief of staff of the IDF in all but name), who, like many great military commanders, had a clear picture of the battle and how he would win it, but failed to carry his subordinates with him.

But growing uneasiness within the IDF, and even among ministers, was still not strong enough to put an end to Israeli activities in Lebanon, and under Sharon's instructions pressure on the PLO and the Syrians in Beirut grew. On 4–5 August IDF troops entered the Hippodrome, thus increasing the pressure on the besieged forces, and on 9 August an intense artillery barrage on Beirut was accompanied by massive IAF attacks on the

Palestinian refugee camps of Sabra, Shatilla and Bourj el Barajne. Three days later, on 12 August, the IAF conducted yet another massive air bombardment, which lasted for more than twelve hours; unofficial reports put the number of people killed in what became known as 'Black Thursday' at 300.

With Beirut in ruins and the Israelis intensifying the pressure, the siege became unendurable and the Lebanese government sent Chief of Intelligence Jonny Abdo to Arafat as a special emissary, with the demand that Arafat leave Beirut with his men in order to end Israeli harassment of the Lebanese.<sup>25</sup> Without the support of the government of Lebanon, and with the Israeli noose tightening about him, Arafat – with his shrewd sense of reality – came to realize that this was the end of the game. So he acquiesced to the Lebanese government's demand, and deposited a letter to this effect in the hands of Lebanese Prime Minister Shafiq al-Wazzan.<sup>26</sup> On 22 August the first PLO contingent of 379 men left Beirut, and over the course of the next twelve days 14,398 Palestinians were evacuated; Arafat left on 30 August 1982, and 5,200 Syrian troops also departed.

On 23 August, Bashir Gemayel was elected President of Lebanon, and should have taken office on 23 September, but – as things go in Lebanon – he was assassinated on 14 September in Ashrafiya. This was a mortal blow to Sharon's plan in Lebanon, for he had invested enormously in Gemayel and hoped he would sign a peace treaty with Israel. The bomb that killed Gemayel destroyed every reasonable chance that Israel and Lebanon could sign a workable peace treaty. To 'restore order', Israeli troops, on 16 September at 5.00 p.m., marched into Beirut and took up positions there ('Operation Moach Ha'barzel'). This was the first time Israel had ever occupied an Arab capital. Yet there was still more to come. Between 16 and 18 September, with the approval of the Israelis, the Maronite Phalangist militia entered the refugee camps of Sabra and Shatilla to 'clean out' the 2,000 PLO guerillas who, according to reports, were still hiding there.<sup>27</sup>

But, again, as things go in Lebanon, they massacred between 600 and 700 Palestinians – children, women and men. The Israelis did not take part in the killing, although they did provide artillery support and also – contrary to Israeli official statements – Israeli paratroopers of the 35th brigade were present in the camps while the killing was still under way or immediately after it. The assassination of Gemayel and the massacre which followed it symbolizes, perhaps more than anything else, the total collapse of Israel's disastrous adventure in Lebanon in 1982. It had cost her more than 700 lives, and led to world condemnation.

## THE LEBANON WAR AND ISRAELI SOCIETY

The Lebanon invasion marked a new era in the attitude of the Israelis to war. If between 1948 and 1967 Israelis had shown an unconditional willingness to serve and to sacrifice and had hardly ever expressed criticism of their leadership, and if after 1967, in spite of growing criticism and dissent, Israelis were still willing to take up arms and rally behind their leadership in war, then in 1982, for the first time in Israel's history, Israelis criticized and also took a stand by refusing to cooperate and fight.

The Lebanon War was perhaps the most controversial of all of Israel's wars, and it broke the former national consensus on defence and encouraged the previously little known phenomenon of conscientious objection. While the war was still in progress, eighty-six reservists, including fifteen officers, had sent a letter to the government which became known as the 'Letter of the 100', stating their opposition to the war and requesting to do their reserve duty not in Lebanon but within Israeli territory. A movement called 'Soldiers against Silence' was formed, calling for the removal from office of the Defence Minister and for an immediate end to the war. By September 1982, over 500 Israelis

had enrolled as supporters of a new organization called *Yesh Gvul*, which became the spearhead of opposition to the war. After the massacres in Sabra and Shatilla, opposition to the war grew dramatically, and the number of men expressing their unwillingness to serve in Lebanon soared. In an attempt to keep the phenomenon of refusal to serve under the carpet, the authorities often came to 'private arrangements' with soldiers. According to a report in the *New York Times* (2 May 1983), citing an Israeli source, hundreds of refusers had been spared jail by the government to avoid publicity. But there were still people who were sent to jail. By March 1983, twenty-eight Israelis were known to have served time in prison rather than in Lebanon, and by September eighty-six jail sentences are known to have been given to reservists; by January 1985, thirty months after the invasion, 143 reservists had been jailed for refusal to serve in Lebanon. These may be insignificant numbers for a state whose population at the time exceeded four million but, given that refusal to serve and fight was virtually unknown before this war, the figures are indeed significant and represent an important attack on what had been taboo in Israeli society.

The war also prompted some of the biggest demonstrations in the history of the state. On 26 July, while war was still raging in Lebanon, 10,000 civilians gathered in Tel Aviv to protest, and as one minister in Begin's cabinet put it: 'It was the first time in the history of Israel that such an event had taken place during the course of a war'.<sup>28</sup> Public agitation over the continuing war, its accompanying casualty list, and such horrors as were manifested at Sabra and Shatilla, brought to Tel Aviv in September more than 400,000 protesters, whose pressure led to the establishment of a Commission of Inquiry, whose findings when published led to the removal from office of the architect of the war, Ariel Sharon. The war in Lebanon was also Israel's first ever war in which a senior military commander, Colonel Eli Geva, resigned while war was still in progress, and it was the first time ever that a

whole brigade let it be known that if called to serve in Lebanon it would refuse to obey orders.

That Israelis were reluctant to take part in the war is often explained in terms of this being a 'war of choice', namely a fight which was not forced on Israel but rather one which it had forced on one of its neighbours. But this explanation is flawed, for the 1982 war was not the first 'war of choice' Israel had experienced. In 1956, for example, Israel forced a war on Egypt, and eleven years later, in June 1967, it repeated this exercise, forcing a war on Egypt and then on Syria. Yet the difference between then and now was that in 1956 and 1967 the Israelis had fully cooperated and supported the government in its war policy and were willing to take up arms, whereas now large segments of society, as we have shown, were strongly against the war, some even refusing to take part in it. The explanation for this change of attitude, so it seems, has to do more with a change of perception by the Israelis with regard to the level of the external danger to their state and existence. For both in 1956 and again in 1967, they had felt – rightly or wrongly – that a great external threat still existed and that they were being asked to take up arms in order to remove an acute danger. But in 1982 things looked different. For the peace with Egypt (which was holding well despite Israel's invading Lebanon) seemed to remove the danger to Israel's existence, while in the north and east the Golan Heights and the West Bank seemed to provide a buffer zone against any attempt to invade the country. With this in mind, Israelis felt less threatened than before and were thus more reluctant to take up arms and fight in wars.

# 6

---

## ***INTIFADA***

1987–93

The *Intifada* – the Palestinian uprising in the Gaza Strip, the West Bank and Jerusalem from 1987 to 1993 – imposed on the IDF and on Israeli society as a whole a new sort of warfare, one which Israel found difficult to cope with. Very different from Israel's previous wars, the Palestinian uprising, nevertheless, had one common feature with the Six Day War of June 1967, and particularly with the Yom Kippur War of October 1973, and that is the way it surprised the Israelis, catching them off-guard and completely unprepared both mentally and physically for this new challenge. How did the *Intifada* come about? Who were the rebels and what were their motives? What effect did the uprising have on the Israelis?

## THE SURPRISE

It is natural to cling to the last in a train of incidents as being the actual cause of great events. We often say such things as: 'The killing of four Christians by a Palestinian gunman at a church in East Beirut on 13 April 1975 caused the civil war in Lebanon', or 'The attempt on the life of Israel's Ambassador to London, Shlomo Argov, on 3 June 1982, caused the Israeli invasion of Lebanon'. But rather than being the causes, these incidents should be regarded as the triggers, the sparks, the last straw in an accumulation of incidents which leads to the big event. This is how we should regard the traffic accident, on Tuesday 8 December 1987, between an Israeli vehicle and a car carrying Palestinian labourers returning from a day's work in Israel, which touched off the *Intifada*; it was the spark rather than the real cause of the uprising. Indeed, there have been traffic accidents like this before, and there was nothing to suggest that this particular one, in which four Palestinians were killed and several others injured, should lead to an all-out revolt which would last almost six years and result in hundreds of casualties on both the Israeli and Palestinian sides. But such was the tension, and so charged the atmosphere in the occupied territories at that time, that even a traffic accident was sufficient to trigger a big explosion, particularly since rumours persisted that this was not a straightforward accident but an act of vengeance by an Israeli, whose relative, Shlomo Sekle, had been stabbed to death in the *Souk* of Gaza two days earlier. The view that this was not an innocent accident was reinforced by a statement issued by PLO leader Yasser Arafat in Tunis on 13 December 1987, saying that the killing of the four was a 'premeditated Israeli attack'.

Big gatherings are notorious for having the potential to turn into ugly demonstrations, and this is precisely what happened when hundreds of mourners in Jabalya, Gaza's largest and poorest camp where more than 60,000 refugees dwell, returned

from the funerals of the four victims of the accident and turned on Israeli troops stationed in the area, hurling stones and bottles at them. These, we now know, were the first events of what soon became known as the *Intifada*, which is literally the shivering that grips a person suffering from fever and is often used to refer to brief upheavals.

At first, the Israeli military and political establishment failed to acknowledge the real nature of the disturbances which were still confined to the Gaza Strip. They thought – and on the face of it there was no reason for them to think otherwise – that this was no more than a flare-up of unrest not radically different from previous periods of disorder.<sup>1</sup> So much so that even Yitzhak Rabin, an experienced soldier and by then Defence Minister in Yitzhak Shamir's Likud-Labour government, did not even cancel his previously scheduled trip to Washington (10 December), where he was due, among other things, to agree the final price for seventy F-16 fighter planes that Israel was intending to purchase from the US. With hindsight, it is ironic that Israel was about to buy perhaps the most sophisticated weapons on the market, without realizing that in the war which had already started in the territories these weapons would be totally useless. What is more puzzling is that, even after ten days of intense disturbances in the territories, the Israeli government was still unaware of the real nature of the events. Rabin demonstrated this when, upon his return to the country on 21 December, he convened an airport press conference where he stated that 'Iran and Syria were behind the unrest in the territories'. And Prime Minister Shamir, who in the absence of Rabin was also the acting Defence Minister, put the blame for inflaming the situation on the leadership of the PLO. These, we now know, were totally unfounded statements, for the reality is that neither Iran nor Syria was involved in inciting the Palestinians, and they were as surprised as both the PLO and indeed the Israelis by the outburst of violence. The statements of both Rabin and Shamir also



contradicted IDF's own figures of the time, which showed that about 80 per cent of violent incidents in the territories were initiated locally.

With the benefit of hindsight, which should not, however, be seen as wisdom after the event, we can categorically state that the *Intifada* was not, as is sometimes alleged, a wholly unexpected phenomenon. Indeed, there had been plenty of indications that a major transformation was underway in the occupied territories, that forces were bubbling under the surface and that there was considerable unrest in the Gaza Strip and the West Bank. Figures for the West Bank, which were available to the Israelis on the eve of the uprising, show that between April 1986 and May 1987 there was a weekly average of fifty-six violent demonstrations, involving stone throwing, blocking of roads, raising of the banned Palestinian flag, distributing of leaflets, burning tyres and daubing walls with nationalist graffiti. There was also an average of four incidents a week involving the use of firearms, knives, explosives and petrol bombs, in addition to a weekly arrest of an average of eighty-one West Bankers accused of taking part in demonstrations or engaging in what the Israelis had defined as 'acts of terrorism'. Compared with the previous year these figures indicate a stunning rise of 133 per cent in the number of demonstrations, 183 per cent in the burning of tyres (487 incidents up from 172), 140 per cent in the throwing of stones, and 68 per cent in the blocking of roads. In October 1987, just before the *Intifada* broke out, one correspondent had reported:

You can feel the tension. Worshippers – Jew and Moslem alike – scurry rather than walk. Tourists cluster together and are protected by armed soldiers. . . . In Gaza, you drive a car with Israeli plates at peril. . . . The marketplaces are empty of Israeli shoppers and thousands of Gazans have stayed away from jobs in Israel – some in protest, others out of fear. . . . Fear,

suspicion and growing hatred have replaced any hope of dialogue.<sup>2</sup>

There was also a remarkable change in the quality of Palestinian operations directed against the Israelis, which had become bolder and more daring than in the past, as was manifested in the killing of an Israeli soldier who was shot in broad daylight in the main street of Gaza, in August 1987.

Israeli troops on the ground realized that methods which had been used in the past to dispel demonstrations (which as we have already shown were rife in the pre-uprising period) were not, on the eve of the *Intifada*, as effective as they had previously been. Firing into the air, for instance, which had in the past caused Palestinian demonstrators to scatter, was no longer effective; neither was the method commonly used to disperse college girls, which was for an Israeli soldier to open his fly and begin tugging down his pants. But then, as the saying goes, 'Eyes have they but they see not', and the Israeli political-military leadership had failed, in spite of available information (as in October 1973), to read the writing on the wall and see that what they were facing was a much more serious event than a bout of violence.

## A SOCIAL UPRISING

### **The rebels: their motives and aims**

Who were the rebels? Schiff and Ya'ari say they were first and foremost 'the poor . . . the forsaken and forgotten at the bottom of the social heap'.<sup>3</sup> These were desperate people, mostly refugees from previous wars between Israel and the Arabs, who had been living in appalling, disgraceful, harsh and insanitary conditions in the occupied territories, mainly in Gaza's eight refugee camps, where unemployment was running at 50-60 per cent

and where large families, often two or three generations, were crammed into small tumbledown dwellings. Their conditions and standards of living were better than they had been when Israel had occupied the territories twenty years before – telephone subscribers multiplied sixfold, and the number of private cars grew tenfold – but standards were still appalling. In 1973 the Israelis embarked on a programme aimed at rehabilitating the refugees by constructing apartments and providing money to inhabitants to build their own houses. But this was done at a snail's pace and fell short of Palestinians' expectations. On the eve of the *Intifada* only 8,600 families had been moved to new housing, and at this rate it was apparent that the camps would never be dismantled, for it would take about fifty years to build new homes for the other 33,000 families, while natural increase proceeded at more than double the pace of construction. This was frustrating, especially for the younger generation of Palestinians, many of whom were working in Israel, where high standards of living demonstrated to them how appalling was their own situation.

Indeed, most of the demonstrators, at least on the eve of the uprising, were labourers who worked from dawn to dusk in 'dirty jobs' of the sort Israelis shunned; they knew the Israelis well and spoke their language. But when questioned, after being arrested by the Israelis, regarding their motives in joining the *Intifada*, they often complained of injustice done to them by Israeli employers. They talked of the harsh way they were treated by a country which demanded they pay social security – which they knew would never be repaid to them – but also banned them from joining labour unions and establishing workers' committees. They were humiliated and often delayed for hours with no explanation at the Erez Checkpoint, which is the main gate from the Gaza Strip to Israel, and they were occasionally forced to imitate barking, bleating, or other animal sounds before being allowed to cross into Israel. They were not allowed

to stay overnight in Israel and, while many of them did make the long daily journey back home, some preferred to break the law and hide overnight in Israel to spare themselves the humiliation at the Erez crossing just to emerge the next morning at their working place. These people, who became the spearhead of the *Intifada*, had no wish to cultivate Palestinian national consciousness, and in fact many of them knew little about the Palestinian National Covenant or about such concepts as 'the right to self-determination'. What they were looking for when joining the demonstrations was simply a better life.

Another group to join the *Intifada* were graduates. In the 1970s graduates could easily find jobs, especially in the Gulf, but the crisis in the oil economies and fewer opportunities in Jordan meant that some 15,000 Palestinian college graduates were unemployed on the eve of the *Intifada*; they were desperate and bored and they directed their anger and frustration at the Israelis. The Israelis, in turn, were aghast, for after all it was during the twenty years of occupation that they had allowed the building of seven new universities on the West Bank, and when graduates of these institutions now joined the uprising, the Israelis felt betrayed; they felt that the graduates were biting the hand which had fed them.

Islamic militants, such as a group calling itself 'Islamic Jihad', also involved themselves the moment the first attacks on the Israelis started. Established in 1981, after splitting from the Moslem Brotherhood in the occupied territories, Islamic Jihad first became widely known in February 1986, when some of its members tossed a grenade at a group of Israeli soldiers and Jewish settlers. This was followed by more attacks, notably in October 1986, when Islamic Jihad activists threw hand grenades at an Israeli military graduation ceremony at the Western Wall. At a later stage of the *Intifada* another fundamentalist group, Hamas, would join and play a leading part in the revolt.

The rebels of all groups represented a new generation of

Palestinians, who after twenty years of Israeli occupation were far more militant and radical than previous generations, and whose role models were not Yasser Arafat, George Habash and others of the PLO old guard, but rather such young daring activists as the six Palestinians who escaped from the Gaza Central Prison in May 1987 and later in October were shot dead in a shoot-out with *Shin Bet*, Israel's internal security police. Another role model to catch the imagination of these young Palestinians was the young member of Ahmed Jibril's Syrian-backed PFLP, who on 25 November 1987 – just before the outbreak of the *Intifada* – flew across the Lebanese border in an ultra-light hang-glider, landed in a field, entered a nearby Israeli army camp and mowed down six soldiers and wounded thirteen before being shot. In the occupied territories this attack which became known in Israel as 'The night of the hang-gliders' caused widespread satisfaction, and it was seen as a heroic operation which destroyed the myth of Israeli defences. Indeed, what these daring operations did was to help puncture Israel's image of invincibility among young Palestinians in the occupied territories, and prepare them, above all mentally, for the *Intifada*.

## THE EXPLOSION

### **Palestinian action – Israeli reaction**

The day after the funerals at Jabalya, Palestinians in the Gaza Strip blocked roads with rocks, tyres, broken furniture and steel sewage pipes; they also stoned Israeli soldiers. Unlike the events of the previous day, which had been spontaneous, these were pre-planned by local leaders. When met by a hail of stones, Israeli troops resorted to live ammunition, and this resulted in the killing of seventeen-year-old Hatem Abu Sisi, who was shot by a bullet through the heart and became the first 'martyr' of the *Intifada*. From Jabalya the demonstrations and riots spread like a

wildfire to other refugee camps – to Khan Yunis, al Bourej, Nuseirat and Ma'azi, and then to Rafah. They then spread to the more secular and affluent West Bank – to Balata, Kalandia and other villages and towns. This opening wave of riots lasted twelve consecutive days and was particularly intense in the Gaza Strip, where it seemed as if all ages and classes were out on the streets confronting the Israelis.

It was clear from the start that the IDF was ill prepared and had no ready made answer to the problem of civil resistance on this scale, in which the weapons used by the rebels were so primitive that Israel's tanks, aeroplanes, rockets and artillery lost all significance. It was an odd situation, in which the Israelis were so powerful that they could not apply their might and, ironically, if they were to be able to deal effectively with the problem without shooting the demonstrators – for Israel could not afford this due to public opinion at home and abroad – they had to downgrade their weapons. It is important to note here that the Palestinians' policy was not to resort to arms, for they knew that if they did use guns the Israelis would then have a pretext to use their might and crush the uprising by using their more sophisticated arms. What the Israeli troops needed was the most basic and elementary riot gear such as shields, helmets, clubs and tear gas, but these were all in short supply, and as then Deputy Chief of Staff Ehud Barak later admitted to the author, 'We were not technically prepared to deal with a violent popular riot on this scale'.<sup>4</sup>

Why the Israelis were not 'technically' prepared for the outbreak of an uprising is hard to explain, but the fact remains that although officials at the defence ministry did contemplate, in the years before the *Intifada*, the idea of purchasing vehicles equipped with water cannon for dispersing demonstrations, as well as other anti-riot devices such as electric arrows, slippery dust to coat the streets, nets for trapping demonstrators, and sneeze bombs, no action had followed. Special dogs were trained to

disperse demonstrators, but were never throughout the twenty years of occupation put on the streets lest Israel be accused of resorting to methods used in South Africa or Nazi Germany. What was also evident from the start was that the Israelis lacked any experience in dealing with large-scale riots. In the past it had been suggested that special units be trained to deal with potential riots, but the army High Command objected to this, preferring to have army units serve occasionally in the territories so they could gain some experience in dealing with civil unrest and get to know the terrain.

During the opening days and weeks of the *Intifada* the Israeli High Command was in a state of disarray; it was simply at a loss and did not know how to deal with the new warfare which had been imposed on it. Its first move, however, was to react to calls for reinforcement, and within three days the number of troops patrolling the occupied territories had increased threefold in comparison to normal times. Although renowned for its flexibility and ability to alter and adapt itself to changing situations, the Israeli High Command was, in the opening phases of the uprising, no match for the Palestinians, whose ability to devise quick new methods to adapt to changes in the IDF's tactics had made the latter obsolete even before they were fully implemented. Thus, when the Israelis decided that foot patrols were ineffective in dealing with the riots, and that they should turn to motorized patrols in jeeps and command cars, the Palestinians immediately reacted by sprinkling the roads with nails to puncture the tyres of the Israeli vehicles.

Israel's worst fear was that the riots might spread to Jerusalem, where the international media had a strong presence and could broadcast the disturbances and Israeli reaction to the world. This nightmare came true when, on 19 December 1987, riots started simultaneously in a number of locations in the capital, with no fewer than 5,000 Palestinians taking part in them. East Jerusalem now experienced the worst violence since the Six

Day War of June 1967, and the scenes previously seen on the streets of the Gaza Strip and West Bank of barricades, burning tyres, Palestinian flags and stone-throwing were evident in Jerusalem. Demonstrators set fire to municipal vehicles and stoned Israeli-owned restaurants in East Jerusalem, and cars carrying Israeli plates passing through the Arab districts of Jerusalem – Abu Dis, Shuafat, Jebel Mukaber and Azariah.

Israeli strategy in Jerusalem was a systematic campaign of harassment aimed at putting indirect but intense pressure on the Palestinians: they stopped and searched Arab cars, checked the condition of windscreen wipers and seat belts or made sure that the driver and passengers had paid their taxes. Furthermore, a new rule forbade Moslems from outside the city to pray at the Haram al-Sharif, the noble sanctuary, where the Dome of the Rock and the Al-Aqsa Mosque had stood for almost 1,500 years; everyone entering a mosque in Jerusalem was checked. In addition, neighbourhoods where violence recurred were placed under curfew. But still the disturbances continued.

The local Palestinian leadership in the Gaza Strip and West Bank was quick to organize itself and give a clear direction to what seemed to be, at first sight, utter chaos. Representatives of Fatah (Yasser Arafat), the Popular Front (George Habash), the Democratic Front (Naif Hawatmeh), the Palestine Communist Party and Islamic Jihad all joined forces against the common enemy, Israel, and established the 'Unified National Leadership of the Uprising' (UNLU) which became the coordinating body of the *Intifada* on the West Bank. The names of the UNLU's leaders remained anonymous, partly because of the fear that revealing their identity might lead to a situation where fellow Palestinians refused to obey their instructions, for after all they were petty, often unknown, local leaders. There was also the fear that coming out into the open might invite pressure from the PLO, which was alarmed from the start in case the local leadership took over and marginalized it. And obviously, if UNLU leaders were to



identify themselves it would become much easier for Israeli security services to arrest or even kill them.

The UNLU leaders communicated to and led the Palestinians by issuing leaflets and communiqués in which they encouraged their followers to take direct action against the Israelis. The 60,000 copies of the first communiqué were issued on 10 January 1988. It called on 'the heroes of the stone and firebomb war to redouble the revolutionary content . . . shake the oppressive regime down to its foundations [and create] . . . inviolable unity'. More practically it called on the Palestinians to take the following measures:

All roads must be closed to the occupation forces . . . its cowardly soldiers must be prevented from entering refugee camps and large population centres by barricades and burning tyres. . . . Stones must land on the heads of the occupying soldiers and those who collaborate with them. Palestinian flags are to be flown from minarets, churches, rooftops, and electricity poles everywhere. . . . We must set the ground burning under the feet of the occupiers. Let the whole world know that the volcanic uprising that has ignited the Palestinian people will not cease until the achievement of independence in a Palestinian state whose capital is Jerusalem.<sup>5</sup>

In this and other communiqués the aims of the uprising were further crystallized, and included among others: forcing the withdrawal of the IDF from cities, towns and refugee camps; evacuating Ariel Sharon from his house in the Old City of Jerusalem where he settled in the Moslem quarter in a move which outraged the Arabs and was aimed to show that Jerusalem belonged to the Jewish people; repealing the Emergency Regulations (such as administrative detention, deportation, the demolition of houses and other collective punishments implemented by the Israelis); releasing detainees; halting the expropriation of

land and the establishment of new Jewish settlements on Arab land; abolishing value-added tax; dispersing all the municipal, village and refugee camp councils, and the holding of democratic elections in the West Bank and Gaza Strip.

Most communiqués were drafted by a certain Mohamad Labadi, who became a leading figure during the period of the *Intifada*, and were then sent to his colleagues, who represented all factions of the PLO, for final approval. Occasionally, however, the entire command would meet, each time in a different location in East Jerusalem to escape Israeli interference, to decide its policy and work on its leaflets, which were then distributed by young boys and girls who placed them in the entrance of mosques, or plastered them on telephone poles alongside Palestinian flags. Later, the texts of the communiqués would be also broadcast by the Voice of the PLO radio station in Baghdad and the Al Quds Palestinian Arab Radio based in Damascus.

It is notable that the PLO leadership in Tunis was not at all involved in organizing the *Intifada* during its initial stages, but was indeed very worried that local leaders would gain influence at its expense. This is why it put strong pressure on the local leadership and, beginning with communiqué no. 3 of 18 January 1988, all leaflets were signed also by the PLO and read 'Palestine Liberation Organization – Unified National Leadership of the Palestinian Uprising in the Occupied Territories'. This, so PLO-Tunis believed, would make it clear that the UNLU leadership was no more than an 'arm' of the PLO acting on its behalf in the occupied territories. While the UNLU was functioning on the West Bank, a similar body was established in the Gaza Strip. It was, however, not as influential as its West Bank counterpart, mainly because the Islamic fundamentalists held themselves aloof and refused to take part in this committee of leaders.

The first few weeks of the *Intifada*, that is from 9 to 31 December 1987, were chaotic and violent. Figures show that in this short period twenty-two Palestinians were killed by Israeli

gunfire; five of them were children aged between thirteen and sixteen. In addition, some 320 were injured, two thirds of them aged between seventeen and twenty-one. The high toll amongst children was the direct result of them taking an active part in the uprising, but it was also because the practice of Israeli troops was to shoot at the legs of the demonstrators in order not to kill them – which for small children was lethal. On the Israeli side, fifty-six soldiers and thirty civilians were injured by stones and bottles. In this single month there were 1,412 separate incidents of demonstrations, stoning, tyre-burning, blocking roads and raising barricades. At least 109 firebombs were thrown, in addition to twelve instances of arson and three grenade attacks; some 270 Palestinians were arrested.

In the meantime, after recovering from its initial shock, Israel, in mid-January 1988, deployed two divisional commands on the West Bank and a third in the Gaza Strip; the number of men patrolling Palestinian areas rose to the point where there was a shortage of equipment, and it was necessary to open up emergency stores and distribute equipment usually reserved for all-out wars with Arab regular armies.

In spite of growing pressure, the riots did not cease: the UNLU continued to function, and its prestige among the Palestinians steadily grew. In fact, it became so influential that under its pressure four municipal council members appointed by the Israelis resigned in February 1988, and on 11 March there was a mass resignation of Palestinian policemen. The Palestinians also organized communal support, with 'Popular Committees' springing up in almost every city and village of the Gaza Strip and the West Bank, and covering every sphere of life from education and security to business activity and sanitation, as well as youth, student, women's and workers' affairs. It is estimated that during the years of the *Intifada* there were around 45,000 local committees of various kinds in the territories.

## ENTER HAMAS

A nasty surprise awaited Israelis in February 1988 when a new militant fundamentalist group which was an offshoot of the Moslem Brotherhood joined the *Intifada*. It was called the 'Islamic Resistance Movement' (*Harakat al-Muqawama al Islami*), that is ' Hamas' from the Arabic acronym whose literal meaning is 'courage' or 'zeal'. Hamas was set up by Sheikh Ahmad Yassin and six other leaders of the Moslem Brotherhood in the occupied territories, and it was financed mainly by its supporters worldwide, who made contributions as part of the *zakat* – the Islamic tax. It was well organized, especially in the Gaza Strip. Three of its Islamic activists were appointed to serve as commanders: one was put in charge of political affairs, the second in charge of propaganda and the printing and distributing of handbills, and the third, Salah Shehadeh, whose code name was '101', was put in charge of military matters and led the armed wing of Hamas, which was named after Izz al Din Qassam, leader of the Arab *Intifada* against the British from 1936 to 1939. It had about 200 volunteers, who received the title *Mujahedu Falastin* ('holy fighters of Palestine'). Hamas divided the Gaza Strip into five districts, each headed by an operations officer and a liaison officer whose job was to maintain regular contact with Islamic activists on the West Bank. Hamas swiftly rose to prominence, and by the second month of the *Intifada* it was playing a leading role.

It should be mentioned that the emergence of the fundamentalists, both Islamic Jihad and Hamas, to power and influence on the West Bank and particularly in the Gaza Strip, was partly the result of Israel's folly and short-sighted policy which attempted, in the years before the uprising, to play the fundamentalists off against the PLO in order to counterbalance and weaken the latter. Ironically, however, while the PLO had avoided any hint of anti-Semitism, the fundamentalists gloried in it, and

Jew hatred was a common feature of their publications, as shown in the following extracts from *The Covenant of the Islamic Resistance Movement*:

There is no solution to the Palestinian problem except by Jihad. . . . The Nazism of the Jews does not skip women and children, it scares everyone. . . . This wealth [of the Jews] permitted them to take over control of the world media such as news agencies, the press, publication houses, broadcasting and the like. [They also have used this] wealth to stir revolutions in various parts of the globe. . . . They stood behind the French and the Communist Revolutions. . . . They also used the money to establish clandestine organizations which are spreading around the world in order to destroy societies and carry out Zionist interests. Such organizations are: the Free Masons, Rotary Clubs, Lions Clubs, B'nai B'rith and the like. All of them are destructive spying organizations. They also used the money to take over control of the Imperialist states and made them colonize many countries in order to exploit the wealth of those countries. . . . [the Jews] stood behind World War I, so as to wipe out the Islamic Caliphate. . . . [The Jews] . . . established the League of Nations in order to rule the world by means of that organization. They also stood behind World War II, where they collected immense benefits from trading with war materials. . . . They inspired the establishment of the United Nations and the Security Council . . . in order to rule the world. . . . There was no war that broke out anywhere without their fingerprints on it. . . . The Zionist invasion is a mischievous one. . . . [The Jews] stand behind the diffusion of drugs and toxic of all kinds in order to facilitate its control and expansion. . . . After Palestine [the Jews] will covet expansion from the Nile to the Euphrates. Only when they have completed digesting the area on which they will have laid their hand, they will look forward to more expansion. . . . Their scheme has

been laid out in the Protocols of the Elders of Zion. . . . We have no escape from pooling together all the forces and energies to face this despicable Nazi-Tatar invasion.<sup>6</sup>

Given this approach, it is indeed puzzling that the Israelis came to regard Hamas as less wicked than the PLO and opted for the fundamentalists, allowing them to blossom. Indeed, for a time before the *Intifada*, fundamentalist Moslems could move, with tacit Israeli agreement, into positions of power in the Gaza Strip and the West Bank; some were even allowed to take jobs in the Israeli Civil Administration, the body in daily contact with the Palestinian population at all levels of life. The strengthening position and growing influence of the fundamentalists in Gaza is manifested in figures showing that in the mid-1980s there was a rise in prayer attendance and a return to the traditional Moslem way of life, with Gaza's seventy-seven mosques at the end of the 1967 war multiplying to 160 in the following two decades. On the West Bank new mosques were being built at a rate of forty per year. Although less influential on the West Bank, the Islamic fundamentalists nevertheless held key positions in the small Islamic College in Hebron, and in Nablus they controlled the allocation of welfare to 10,000 needy families, granting loans and scholarships, and running orphanages, homes for the aged and even an independent high school.

It was only in the second year of the uprising that the Israelis came to realize that activists of Hamas were at the forefront of the *Intifada* and, unlike other Palestinian groups which made it their policy to refrain from the use of arms, were preparing caches of arms and explosives. In July and September 1988 the Israelis struck at Hamas, arresting 120 activists and liquidating its command. But this did not spell the end for this group, since it took the movement's middle echelon only a few weeks to recover from the blow and re-embark on anti-Israeli activities as part of the *Intifada*.

## RECOVERING THE INITIATIVE BUT FAILING TO SUPPRESS THE UPRISING

To quell the growing resistance and put an end to the uprising, the Israelis resorted to various methods ranging from cutting off telephone lines and electricity to placing extended curfews on villages, towns and whole cities. On the West Bank localized curfews were imposed, while in Gaza more broad curfews were used. During 1988, no fewer than 1,600 curfew orders were issued in the territories, 118 of them for five days or more; all in all some 60 per cent of the Palestinian population experienced life under curfew. The Israelis also uprooted trees and occasionally entire orchards to deny the Palestinians the hiding places from where they could strike at Israeli troops; according to Palestinian figures, during 1988 the Israelis uprooted more than 25,000 olive and fruit trees. Furthermore, the demolishing of houses, which before the outbreak of the *Intifada* was considered an extraordinary measure used only against Palestinians who had committed serious offences, became, as from December 1987, a common means of administrative punishment. Thus, whereas before the outbreak of the *Intifada* demolishing a house had required the special approval of the Defence Minister, now with the *Intifada* underway, it was left to the discretion of an area commander. And figures show that it was used frequently: in 1987 the number of houses demolished was 103, and in 1988 it rose to a staggering 423. Deportations, another draconian measure, were also used to quell the disturbances, as well as the closure of schools and universities which had been shut down for most of the first eighteen months of the *Intifada*.

The use of live ammunition against stone-throwers who were mostly young children was disastrous for the Israelis from a public relations point of view. The Israelis thus looked for ammunition which would enable them to hit Palestinians from a distance but not kill them. In 1989 rubber bullets were

introduced. But these proved to be ineffective and so were replaced by plastic bullets, which proved to be more lethal than expected and so were replaced by rubber bullets with steel centres. Troops were also provided with light, easy-to-handle clubs, strong enough not to break even when inflicting the heaviest of blows – ironically, the firms that manufactured these clubs employed mostly Arab workers from the Gaza Strip. At a meeting with troops in Ramallah, Defence Minister Rabin told them: ‘Gentlemen, start using your hands, or clubs and simply beat the demonstrators in order to restore order’.<sup>7</sup> This became known as Rabin’s ‘break their bones’ policy, and it is a testimony to the troops’ frustration that they took Rabin’s advice literally: the blows they inflicted on Palestinians left many of these people handicapped. So, ironically, as Schiff and Ya’ari have observed:

Rather than being hailed as a symbol of sanity, or at least the lesser of two evils, and rather than being used with discretion to subdue rioters resisting arrest, the club reverted to being an emblem of barbarity and was employed with abandon by men who had simply let the uprising get their goat.<sup>8</sup>

In the face of worldwide condemnation, the Israeli authorities were forced to modify Rabin’s instructions, which subsequently stated: ‘Force is not to be used against sensitive parts of the body’, and later,

Force may be used against violence and those resisting arrest while the violence is being committed, up to the point of capture. [But] the exercise of force against anyone who has been stopped, is under arrest, or is already in custody and is not behaving violently is absolutely forbidden.

The Israelis also revised and amended legal procedures to



facilitate mass arrests of rioters, and the establishment of new detention facilities in March 1988 in Ketziot, which had a capacity of 7,000 prisoners, and at Daharieh, near Hebron, made it possible to hold thousands of detainees for extended periods. About 50,000 Palestinians were arrested during the first eighteen months of the *Intifada*, with more than 12,000 of them held in administrative detention for periods of varying length. One in every eighty Palestinian adults in the territories was imprisoned by administrative order, while one in forty had spent more than twenty-four hours in detention for taking part in the uprising. But jails, as the Israelis later learnt, only produced more militants; for while the Israelis could ensure that their prisoners did not run away, they could not really control lives inside the jails. Thus the jails had effectively turned into political schools, where a new generation of Palestinian leaders was formed and a strong bond created among the Palestinians.

Economic measures were also used by the Israelis to put down the rebellion. For example, a systematic campaign was launched to break the Palestinian tax strike, which had been introduced by the Palestinian population following UNLU's instructions. The campaign was carried out during curfews, with the security forces' full cooperation, and proved to be highly effective from the Israeli point of view; in the Gaza Strip, for example, the income from taxes actually rose at the end of 1988. Furthermore, individualized types of economic punishment were imposed, such as the banning of Palestinian villages in the Jordan Valley from bringing their harvest to market in Jericho, which was a devastating blow for them for they relied heavily on selling their crops in Jericho. Economic measures hit the Palestinians hard. In 1988 their standard of living, which was already low, fell by as much as 30–40 per cent, and by the beginning of 1989 the unemployment figure had risen sharply, with the number of people working in Israel, a critical source of income for the Palestinian economy, declining by more than 25 per cent. Israel also paid heavily for this

war of attrition. As a consequence of the *Intifada*, its commercial turnover fell 25 per cent below the original forecast for 1988, which translated into a loss of almost \$1 billion. In the building and textile trades, the decline reached as much as 10–15 per cent; tourism dropped by 14 per cent and total exports from Israel to the territories diminished by no less than 34 per cent.

But even these measures failed to stop the rioting – the Palestinians continued to throw stones, to raise the Palestinian flag, and to spray walls with political graffiti, often in one of the four colours of the Palestinian standard. Red in the flag signified the blood of the martyrs, green the fertility of the Palestinian plains, white, peace, and black the oppression of occupation to be removed when Palestine was liberated. A revolt, which at its opening stage was carried out by the impoverished classes who only wished to improve their standards of living, now turned into a statement of political import.

A year of uprising, from December 1987 to December 1988, proved to be very violent and produced a high death toll. Three hundred and eleven Palestinians were killed, forty-four of them children aged 13–16, and nine children under the age of nine lost their lives. In addition, fifteen Palestinian civilians were killed by Israeli civilians, six Israeli civilians were killed by Palestinian civilians, and four Israeli security force personnel were killed by Palestinian civilians. The number of houses demolished during this period had reached a staggering 526.

There were times when it seemed as if the revolt was spreading from the occupied territories to Israel itself. In July 1989, for instance, a Palestinian refugee from Gaza wrested the steering wheel of a passenger bus from its driver and sent it over a cliff, killing fifteen people. In May 1990, a former Israeli soldier opened fire on unarmed Arab workers south of Tel Aviv, killing seven. Hamas was also causing Israel great problems, and in May 1989 the Israelis inflicted a second blow on the organization, arresting the organization's spiritual leader Sheikh Yassin along

with his aides and some 260 activists. But fundamentalism remained, especially in the Gaza Strip, a mass movement resolved to destroy Israel and change the face of Palestinian society. When in the early 1990s Israelis and Palestinians embarked on the road to peace, Hamas was to inflict appalling acts of terrorism which would often halt and reverse the entire peace process.

Officially, the *Intifada* continued until Israel and the Palestinians had signed the Oslo Agreement on 13 September 1993. In the period between 9 December 1987 and 13 September 1993, some 1,070 Palestinian civilians were killed by Israeli security forces in the occupied territories and seventeen more in Israel. Of those killed, sixty-four were children under the age of twelve, and 173 were aged 13–16. In addition, fifty-four Palestinian civilians were killed by Israeli civilians (mostly settlers) in the territories, and a further twenty-one in Israel. In the same period, forty-eight Israeli civilians were killed by Palestinians in the occupied territories, and fifty-three within Israel itself. Forty-two Israelis of the security forces were killed by Palestinians in the occupied territories, and seventeen were killed in Israel. Thousands of Palestinians and hundreds of Israelis were injured, and 1,473 Palestinian houses were demolished. Deportation of activists was also rife; 413 Hamas and Islamic Jihad activists were deported to southern Lebanon in December 1992.

## **INTIFADA AND ISRAELI SOCIETY**

The Israelis were shocked to the core by the magnitude and ferocity of the Palestinian uprising, for as Schiff and Ya'ari correctly observed:

There seemed to be a collective mental block in Israel [with regard to the Palestinians and territories]. . . . The Jewish public tended to repress the Palestinian issue entirely, relating to the territories as though they were a distant land. In a sense the

Israelis discovered the territories twice: at the end of the Six Day War, when attention was riveted on their historical landscape with all its biblical landmarks, and again some twenty years later, in December 1987, when the Palestinian population made it impossible for them to cling to the blinders that had made the million and a half Arabs under Israeli military rule so conveniently invisible.<sup>9</sup>

And as the Israeli novelist David Grossman observed in *The Yellow Wind*, just before the *Intifada* erupted: 'We [Israelis] have lived for 20 years in a false and artificial situation based on illusions, on a teetering centre of gravity between hate and fear, in a desert void of emotion and consciousness'. Someday, Grossman warned, 'it will exact a deadly price'.<sup>10</sup> Indeed, Israelis by no means ignored the territories, and when the *Intifada* came it sent a sharp jolt through the whole of society, forcing it to re-examine propositions that had long been taken for granted. As the uprising dragged on from week to week, month to month and year to year, and with a high death toll on both sides, Israelis came increasingly to realize that their country was slipping back to the starting line in its conflict with the Palestinians. Through this shocking experience, the Israelis came to realize that their leaders had deceived them in pronouncing that the Palestinian people did not exist, or, as Prime Minister Golda Meir used to put it, 'there is no Palestinian nation'. Israelis now saw how they had all been dragged down to the level of brute violence, and they ceased to believe that 'benevolent occupation' was possible.

What the *Intifada* did to Israeli society was to divide it and sharpen its polarization, with the first division drawn between Israelis and the 700,000 Arab Israelis living within the Green Line. We should remember that although most Arabs left Palestine during 1947–8 and also during the 1967 war, there was still in Israel, on the eve of the *Intifada*, a community of Arabs making up about 17 per cent of Israel's total population.

Throughout the years these Arab Israelis had become an integral part of Israeli society; they held Israeli identity cards, spoke Hebrew, studied and worked in Israel. But with their fellow Palestinians revolting in the occupied territories, the Arabs of Israel found it increasingly difficult to remain aloof. On 17 December, just a week after the outbreak of the *Intifada*, they held a general strike and rallies in support of the Palestinians in the territories, and on 21 December embarked on a general strike. They also sent food and medicine to the territories, and donated blood; a few even made their bank accounts available to the PLO for transferring funds to the territories. In taking these actions, the Arabs of Israel showed themselves to be more Palestinian than Israeli, and for the Jewish Israelis this was a shocking realization.

But the *Intifada* also sharply divided the Jewish population itself, and although there was a general move to the political right and a wave of extremism in Israel, there was also a sharp move to the left, where a growing number of Israelis emerged to declare themselves unwilling to serve in the territories and put down the uprising. From this point of view, the trend which had begun in the Lebanon war, of Israelis refusing to take up arms, was continuing. In fact, as far back as October 1987, that is just before the outbreak of the *Intifada*, a group of fifty high school students about to become eligible for military service had signed a letter to Defence Minister Rabin expressing their intention to refuse to serve beyond the Green line; at the time they claimed they had 'hundreds of supporters'. With the *Intifada* rearing its ugly head, the number of Israelis refusing to serve in the territories increased rapidly, with the protest movement *Yesh Gvul* – which had played a leading role during the Lebanon war – encouraging this stand. At the end of December 1987, sixteen more students joined the group which had sent the October letter to the Defence Minister. Also that December, 160 reservists, including one woman, one Jerusalem city councillor and several officers, followed suit by declaring that they refused to

participate in putting down the *Intifada*. In mid-February 1988, *Yesh Gvul* announced that 260 reservists had proclaimed that they would not carry out any orders to beat Palestinians. With the number of Israelis refusing to serve in the territories growing by the day, the military authorities attempted to keep the phenomenon under the carpet, as it had done during the Lebanon war, and it came to arrangements with many of those refusing to serve, promising not to send them to fulfil missions in the occupied territories. Nevertheless, as was the case during the Lebanon war, there were those who were sent to jail: on 18 July 1989, it was reported in the *Jerusalem Post* that seventy-seven Israeli soldiers had been imprisoned for refusing to serve in the occupied territories. Although these numbers are small, they are not insignificant, especially if we remember that from the immediate pre-state period until 1970, only a little over 100 Jewish Israelis publicly refused to serve. Also, as was the case during the 1982 war in Lebanon, big demonstrations took place in Israel while troops in the territories were still grappling with the uprising. Thus, on 23 January 1988, between 80,000 and 100,000 Israelis took part in a demonstration in Tel Aviv to denounce Israeli policies in the occupied territories, and in Nazareth Jews and Arabs held a rally, carrying banners with names of Palestinians killed by Israelis.

It was the signing of the 1993 Oslo Agreement which ended the *Intifada* and enabled a return to some sort of normality in Israeli–Palestinian relationships and Jewish–Arab relationships within Israel proper. But not for long.

# 7

---

## THE AL-AQSA INTIFADA

2000–

The *Al-Aqsa Intifada*, the Palestinian-Israeli war in the Gaza Strip and the West Bank, was sparked off by a controversial visit of the right-wing opposition leader Ariel Sharon, on 28 September 2000 to the Temple Mount in the Old City of Jerusalem. The Temple Mount, known to Muslims as the Haram Al-Sharif ('the Noble Sanctuary') and under Israeli control since the Six Day War of June 1967, is home to a number of mosques, including Al-Aqsa, which have been built over the remains of the second Temple, the holiest site in Judaism.

Escorted by more than 1,000 Israeli police officers and accompanied by several Likud Knesset Members, Sharon made the visit in a bid to boost his political support and reassert Israel's right to the land of Jerusalem. However, the Palestinians saw this visit as provocative and arrogant. It upset them even more that Sharon's walkabout took place around the time of the eighteenth anniversary of the massacre of Palestinians at the

Sabra and Shatilla refugee camps in Lebanon and, that it should have been made by Sharon, with his heavy responsibility for the slaughter in these camps in September 1982.

Just before Sharon's visit, Palestinian and American officials urged Prime Minister Ehud Barak to prohibit it lest it lead to violence. But Barak, seeing Sharon's attempt to visit the Temple Mount as an internal political act directed against him by a political opponent, declined to stop it.

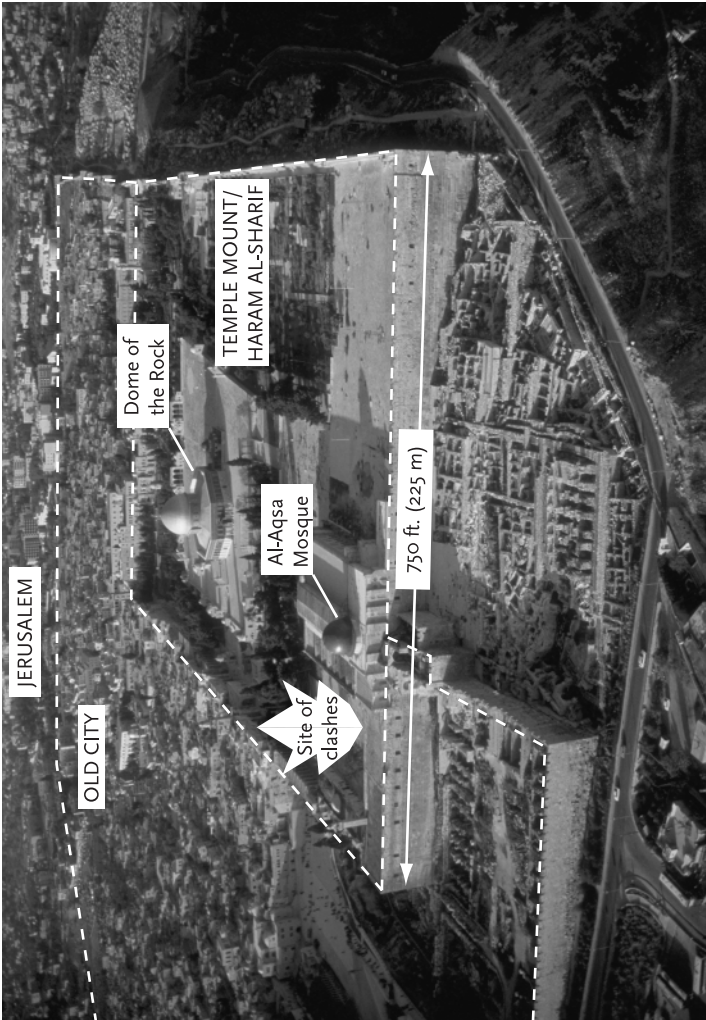
As expected, wild Palestinian riots followed the controversial visit and soon spread, like wildfire, from Jerusalem to other parts of the occupied territories – to the Gaza Strip and to the West Bank – and even spilled over into Israel itself.

To be sure – as is widely acknowledged – Sharon's visit to the Temple Mount was just the trigger, the catalyst, for the Palestinian rioting and not its deep cause.<sup>1</sup> This is to be found elsewhere, namely in the collapse of the Israeli-Palestinian peace process as symbolized, more than anything else, by the failed Camp David Summit of July 2000.

## A FAILED SUMMIT

Convened by President Bill Clinton, the Camp David summit was, in fact, the initiative of the Israeli Prime Minister. Barak pressurized Clinton to help cut the Gordian knot by summoning a Barak-Arafat summit in which the two leaders would take personal charge in negotiating the last remaining points of disagreement and by signing a historic and final peace deal which would put an end to decades of Palestinian-Jewish strife. Arafat was reluctant. He suspected that in such a summit he would be cornered and confronted by a Clinton-Barak front and that he would be held responsible should the summit collapse. What Arafat preferred was that some lower-level talks should sort out the main stumbling blocks before an official summit meeting was convened where he and Barak would only have to sign on





Map 7 The Al-Aqsa Compound (based on Corbis aerial photo)

the dotted line. However, with Barak insisting on a summit and President Clinton determined to sort out the Palestinian-Israeli conflict before he left office, invitations were issued by the White House which, obviously, Barak accepted and Arafat – not wanting to decline an invitation of the President of the United States – agreed to as well.

The summit at the Presidential retreat of Camp David opened on 11 July and right from the start found itself bogged down over two crucial issues. These were the Palestinian demand that large numbers of refugees from previous wars, mainly the 1948 war, be allowed to return to Israel proper and the fate of Jerusalem, notably control over the Temple Mount – the Haram Al-Sharif.

The refugee question, it is worth mentioning, had been exhaustively discussed in the, so-called, 'Swedish Channel' in which Israelis and Palestinians negotiated over this issue during the two months that preceded the Camp David summit. The Israeli line, in these talks, was to induce the Palestinians to make a historic concession on the right of return, in return for Israeli agreement to transfer between 90 and 91 per cent of West Bank land to the Palestinians. There was good progress at Stockholm where a mechanism was devised by which the Palestinians would forgo the total and sweeping right of return of refugees and the international community would contribute \$20 billion over a period of fifteen to twenty years to settle all the refugees' claims. The funds – it was thought – would be given as compensation to refugee households and as an aid grant to the countries that would rehabilitate Palestinian refugees. The Palestinian refugees would be given three options: to settle in the future Palestinian state which would be established alongside Israel; to remain where they were; or to emigrate to countries that would voluntarily open their gates to them, such as Canada, Australia and Norway. The Israelis would receive some 10,000 Palestinian refugees in Israel proper.

Even though the Swedish Channel did not produce a formal agreement between Israelis and Palestinians on the right of return some progress had clearly been made. However, at the Camp David talks, the Palestinians reverted to their traditional position, namely that Israel should recognize that she was entirely responsible for the Palestinian refugee tragedy and take full responsibility for settling this problem by agreeing, unconditionally, to the right of return to Israel of every refugee who desired to exercise it. Did the Palestinians really believe Israelis would agree to the return of hundreds of thousands of Palestinians, thus transforming the Jewish nature of their state? Probably not, but they insisted on the *principle* that every refugee should have the right to return and this was rejected by the Israelis at Camp David. Throughout the summit there was no significant progress on this issue and this eventually proved a major cause of the summit breakdown.

The future of Jerusalem was another stumbling block. At Camp David, the Israelis departed from their traditional demand for complete control over Jerusalem – East and West – and proposed, instead, that the outer envelope of Arab neighbourhoods in Jerusalem should come under Palestinian sovereignty, the inner envelope under functional autonomy, the Old City under a special regime and the Temple Mount under a perpetual Palestinian trusteeship. Arafat rejected this as a solution because it implied an overall Israeli sovereignty in most parts of Jerusalem, notably over the Haram Al-Sharif. On 17 July, President Clinton came up with a bridging proposal at the heart of which was the idea of dividing Jerusalem – two quarters (the Jewish and the Armenian) were to come under Israeli sovereignty and two quarters (the Moslem and the Christian) under Palestinian sovereignty. This two-two proposal meant a clear division of sovereignty in Jerusalem, but still left the Temple Mount with its mosques under overall Israeli sovereignty, only allowing for a Palestinian custodianship over this area. While Prime Minister

Barak accepted this proposal – in fact it was agreed with him beforehand – Arafat, who regarded himself as the guardian of the Holy City not just for Palestinians but for all Muslims, rejected the proposal fearing that should he compromise on Jerusalem he would go down in history as a traitor. On the fourteenth day of the summit, Clinton came up with yet another bridging proposal on Jerusalem – more generous to the Palestinians – which Barak approved pending Arafat's acceptance. The idea was that Israel would take the Jewish neighbourhoods, Arafat most of the Arab neighbourhoods while the Temple Mount would come under Palestinian custodianship but overall sovereignty would remain in Israel's hands. It was rejected by Arafat for, like previous proposals, it denied the Palestinians sovereignty over the heart of Jerusalem – the Haram Al-Sharif.

With the issues of Jerusalem and the fate of the Palestinian refugees unresolved, the Camp David Summit collapsed and the road was open for a war of words. This soon started in earnest as each side, mainly Arafat and Barak, blamed the other for the failure of the summit. President Clinton publicly sided with Barak. He lavished praise on the Prime Minister for his flexibility and chided Arafat for his lack of it. 'The Prime Minister', Clinton said after the summit, 'moved forward from his initial position more than Chairman Arafat'.<sup>2</sup>

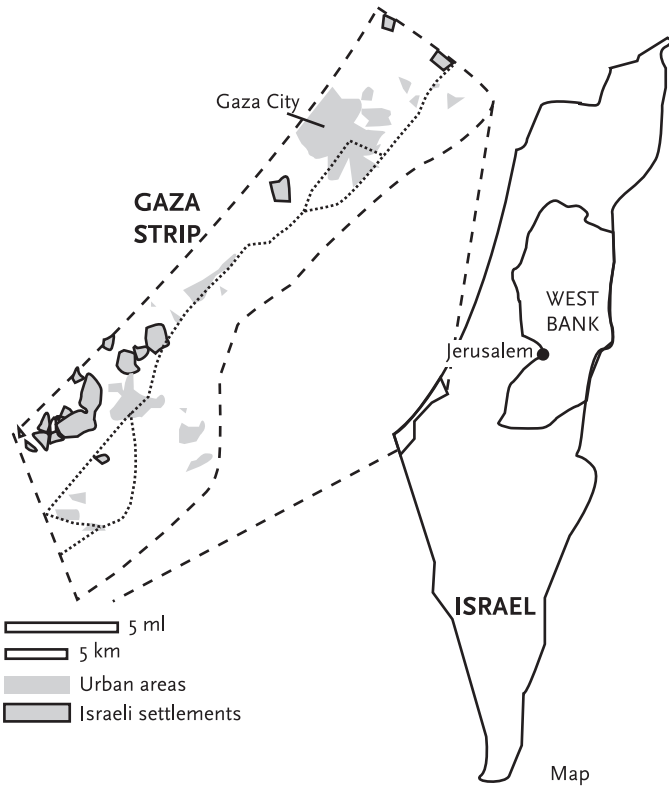
The effect of the failure at Camp David on the situation in the occupied territories was devastating. For it added to the frustration of Palestinians with a peace process which had won them only the shards of an independent state and did not, as they had hoped, improve the reality of life in the occupied territories nor their standards of living. And with Arafat and the Israelis entangled in a war of words and exchange of insults, tension on the ground mounted and the occupied territories became a powder keg. Sharon's visit to Jerusalem, at this most sensitive time, provided the spark which ignited it.

## THE EXPLOSION

On Friday, the day following Sharon's visit, after a politically charged Mosque sermon calling on Muslims to defend the holy site, Palestinians began to throw stones at Jewish worshippers at the base of the Western Wall just below the Temple Mount. As Jews ran for cover, Israeli police responded with rubber-coated metal bullets and live ammunition. Five Palestinians were killed, more than 200 injured and the Israelis themselves suffered 60 injured. From the Temple Mount, disturbances spread deep into Eastern Jerusalem neighbourhoods and continued for the rest of the afternoon with intermittent stone throwing by Palestinians and reprisals from the IDF and police. From Jerusalem, riots and demonstrations then spread to other Palestinian towns and cities – to Ramallah, Bethlehem and the Gaza Strip. On the next day, Saturday 30 September, with the Palestinian Authority declaring a general strike to mourn the victims of the previous day's riots, Palestinian demonstrators scuffled with Israeli police and riots spread as far as Nablus and Hebron.

That day, an event took place which led to a steep escalation of the violence. A television crew from a French news agency, caught on camera the final moments of 12-years-old Mohammed al-Durra. Mohammed died in the blistering cross fire that rocked the junction of the Gaza-Khan Yunis road and the road to the Jewish settlement of Netzarim. He would have been only a bit player in that drama had not a camera turned him into a tragic hero. Footage of Mohammed's death was immediately widely shown in the occupied territories, providing the Palestinians with a martyr to rally behind and stirring still more Palestinians to take to the barricades. On that day, 13 Palestinians were killed and some 400 were injured.

Shocked by the ferocity of the violence, the international community, led by the United States, tried to halt the war in the occupied territories by bringing Arafat and Barak together. On



Map 8 The Gaza Strip

4 October, the two leaders arrived in Paris where it was hoped that, aided by President Jacques Chirac and US Secretary of State Madeleine Albright, they would be able to put the lid on the violence. To no avail.

Back in the occupied territories, on Friday, 6 October, exactly a week after the outbreak of the riots the Israeli police were expecting trouble in Jerusalem. A large number of policemen were mobilized and severe restrictions imposed on the number

of worshippers allowed to enter the Haram Al-Sharif compound. But, as expected, this Friday proved to be a day of massive riots in Jerusalem and elsewhere in the occupied territories.

There were, though, some attempts by Israeli and Palestinian officials to reduce friction in certain flashpoints. Thus, on Saturday 7 October, Israelis and Palestinians agreed that Israeli troops should withdraw, temporarily, from Joseph's Tomb in Nablus, a holy Jewish site, where by then the lives of the few Israelis on guard were at risk, and hand the site over to Palestinian security forces. The Israelis withdrew but later that day, a throng of Palestinian demonstrators stormed the compound, set it on fire and tore away the rock facade of the structure. In a tit-for-tat response, Israelis in Tiberias, northern Israel, attacked and vandalized an ancient mosque.

A significant escalation of the crisis came on 12 October. That day, Palestinians in Ramallah lynched two Israeli reservists, First Sgt. Vadim Novesche and First Cpl. Yosef Avrahami. The two Israelis took a wrong turn en route to their army base and wandered by mistake into the West Bank town of Ramallah, where they came across a funeral procession for a 17-year-old boy shot the day before by Israeli troops. A rumour spread among Palestinians that the reservists belonged to Israel's so-called Arabized forces, troops who disguised themselves as Palestinians, mingled among them and arrested individuals on Israel's wanted list. The Palestinian police took the Israeli reservists into a nearby police station and, for a time, kept the gathering mob at bay. But some of the vigilantes entered through a second-floor window and through the opening, an Italian TV crew filmed the Palestinians stabbing and pummeling the Israelis inside. One of the attackers returned to the window and proudly showed his blood-soaked hands to the jubilant crowd. Moments later, the body of one of the reservists came flying out of the window smashing into the mob below who danced, beat it some more and celebrated before parading the corpse through

the streets of Ramallah to Manara Square. Palestinian police handed over the other badly mutilated soldier to a nearby Jewish settlement where he died shortly afterwards. With such horrifying pictures shown on television – and indeed round the world – Prime Minister Barak came under growing pressure to respond militarily.

Cobra helicopters went into action unleashing their missiles on the police station where the two reservists were lynched, at the parking lot of the Palestinian police station, at the antenna of the broadcasting centre in Ramallah that had been spouting anti-Israel invective, at a police building in the Gaza Strip used by Arafat's Tanzim paramilitary which had orchestrated much of the recent unrest, and at the Gaza Port where twelve boats of the Palestinian Navy were docked. Israeli tanks rumbled out of their camps to cut off roads and encircle Palestinian towns and cities. The Israeli Navy, on 13 October, imposed a blockade on the Gaza Strip.

With the violence in the occupied territories getting out of hand, President Clinton, who had invested much time and energy in the Israeli-Palestinian peace process, intervened personally and called an emergency summit at Sharm el-Sheikh, Egypt, in which Premier Barak and Chairman Arafat participated, along with Egypt's President Mubarak, UN Secretary General Kofi Annan, Jordan's King Abdullah II and the European Union's Javier Solana.

The talks inside the Jolie Ville Golf Resort were businesslike at their best and vituperative at their worst. There were intense meetings on three levels. Barak and Arafat met Clinton separately; the Israeli Foreign Minister and his Palestinian and Arab counterparts met in a joint forum to discuss the concluding announcement of the summit; and the Central Intelligence Agency Chief (CIA), George Tenet, met the Head of Israel's Shin Bet Security Service and his Palestinian counterpart to see how violence could be brought under control. In these talks, Barak



insisted that Hamas and Islamic Jihad militants whom Arafat had released at the start of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* should be returned to jail since now they were at large endangering, according to Barak, the safety of Israeli citizens. Barak also insisted that Arafat should order the paramilitary movement, the *Tanzim*, and the Palestinian police to stop firing on Israelis and Jewish settlements. Arafat, in turn, insisted on a UN-led investigation into the causes of the riots and demanded that Israel should stop using excessive force against Palestinians and ease her military pressure in the Gaza Strip and the West Bank.

It was a sign of their deteriorating relationship that Barak and Arafat did not make any commitments directly to each other, nor did they put anything in writing. Instead, on 17 October after twenty-eight hours of intensive talks, President Clinton squeezed an oral cease-fire plan from Arafat and Barak in which the two leaders committed themselves 'to take immediate concrete measures to end the current confrontation, eliminate points of friction, ensure an end to violence and incitement, maintain calm and prevent recurrence of recent events'. More specifically, Barak agreed to ease military restrictions on the Palestinians by reopening Gaza airport, ending border closings and pulling back troops and tanks from the edge of Palestinian towns and cities to positions held before 28 September. Arafat committed himself to stopping the riots and gun battles, cracking down on anti-Israeli incitement and putting Islamic militants back in jail. It was also agreed that 'there must be a pathway back to negotiations and the resumption of efforts to reach permanent status agreement based on the UN Security Council Resolutions 242 and 338 and subsequent understandings'. While Arafat's insistence on an international investigation into the causes of the events was rejected, the conference decided on an American-led fact-finding commission (later to be known as the Mitchell Commission or the Sharm el-Sheikh Fact-Finding Commission) with members from the US, Turkey, Norway and the UN to investi-

gate the causes of the violent events and propose ways of preventing their recurrence.

The Sharm el-Sheikh agreement was vague enough to enable both Barak and Arafat to claim it as a victory. However, commitments made at the resort of Sharm el-Sheikh were hard to implement on the ground and back in the occupied territories violence flared up as soon as news of a deal spread and was to continue in the days and weeks ahead. By now, the combined death toll had passed 100.

In the meantime in Israel, Prime Minister Barak was fighting for his political survival. His minority government had just 30 seats in the Knesset and could count on the support of only another ten. Barak turned to Sharon, the leader of the opposition, to join him in a broad-based, wall-to-wall coalition which, in Barak's view, was needed to combat the Palestinian uprising. Sharon, however, seemed to prefer letting Barak stew in his own juice and the conditions he imposed on joining the government, notably the right to veto Barak's decisions on peace, were such as the Prime Minister felt he could not accept. Instead, on 30 October, Barak persuaded the Ultra Orthodox Shas party, which had seventeen seats in the Knesset, to provide him with a 'safety net' for a period of a month. He – rather the Israeli tax payer – had to pay dearly for this temporary lifeline for Shas, deeply in debt and with its educational system on the verge of collapse, squeezed some \$1 billion from the Prime Minister.

### **The Al-Aqsa Intifada – Characteristics**

Although similar in many ways to the first Palestinian uprising of 1987–93 – in fact a sort of a sequel to the original *Intifada* – the new Al-Aqsa Intifada had its own unique characteristics. Perhaps most notable was the Palestinians' use of arms – rifles, pistols, hand grenades and even mortars – instead of the rock-throwing melees of the previous uprising. And it is ironic that these arms,

now directed against the Israelis, were given to the Palestinians by the Israelis themselves as part of the 1993 Oslo deal which envisaged an armed Palestinian police force strong enough to defend Arafat's regime against local opposition.

In the first *Intifada* clashes took place in the centres of Palestinian towns and cities. These urban centres were no longer patrolled by Israeli forces but were by now under Palestinian Authority control and the violence moved and was taking place on the edges of towns and cities, usually close to Israeli military checkpoints.

Also, and unlike the 1987–93 *Intifada* where Palestinian attacks in the occupied territories had targeted Israeli security forces, this time the Palestinians, mainly the Tanzim, an armed military affiliated with the Fatah, struck also at Jewish settlers. These attacks included drive-by shootings, ambushes on roads leading to the settlements, sniper fire and mortar attacks and machine gun fire on Jewish settlements.

Another feature of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* was the greater involvement of Israel's Arab citizens. True, during the first *Intifada* the Arab citizens of Israel donated blood, food and money to support the Palestinian uprising in the occupied territories. Nevertheless, they took very little direct action against the Israelis. This time, however, things were different. Upon hearing the calls of their Imams, in the wake of Sharon's controversial visit to Jerusalem, to defend the sacred compound of Jerusalem, Israel's Arab citizens, some 17 per cent of Israel's total population, answered by rioting throughout Galilee (northern Israel), and in the mixed towns and cities in Israel where Jews and Arabs live side by side. In riots between 29 September and 8 October, Arab Israelis blocked roads and clashed with police in Nazareth, Jaffa, Lod, Acre and Haifa. Thirteen were shot dead by the police which left the Israeli Arab community more estranged than it had ever been. There were few instances in Israel's history of the police using guns to suppress demonstrations carried out by its

own citizens. Subsequently, a State Commission of Inquiry, headed by Supreme Court Justice Theodor Or, was established to examine the role of the police during these demonstrations.

Another new feature of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* was the growing coverage of the events by Arab satellite channels, particularly from Arab states, which brought the terrible reality of lives under Israeli occupation to the attention of millions of Muslims across the world. Thus, while during the first *Intifada* events in the occupied territories were covered mainly by Israeli, Jordanian, Egyptian and, of course, American and European television stations, this uprising was covered additionally by such television stations as the Qatar-based *Al-Jezerra*, *LBC* from Beirut, *MBC* from London, *ANN* from Spain, all of whom had a presence in the occupied territories.

And there was another unique characteristic distinguishing the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* from its predecessor, namely the growing use by Palestinians of the Internet as a tool for coordinating grass-root activities and providing constantly updated coverage. Two Web-sites which excelled, during the first months of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*, were *Aroob.com* and *Star.com.jo* which succeeded in covering the events and presenting comprehensive details from various perspectives on Israeli aggression against the Palestinians. Soon a vicious and nasty Cyber war began to develop, with Israeli users sending 'bombs' and viruses through e-mails thus causing Palestinian systems crashes and Palestinians responding in kind. In October 2000, the Palestinian National Authority site was attacked constantly for two days resulting in the display of pornography and Jewish slogans; the attacks apparently came from computers located at the religious Bar Illan University near Tel Aviv. At around the same time, Palestinian users bombarded the Israeli Foreign Ministry, the Army and the Knesset sites with endless messages from different locations causing them to crash. *FreePalestine*, an independent activist Palestinian e-group operating through the Internet, put out a message, saying: 'Israeli sites

started a Cyber war against us. They already crippled the Hezbollah site and they have a site on how to shut down our sites'.<sup>3</sup> The group then gave instructions to attack and counter-attack Israeli sites. This was soon to claim the first-ever victim of a Cyber war when an Israeli boy, Ofir Rahum, got in touch with 'Sali', who lured him to meet her in Ramallah where he was murdered by Palestinians.

But if in this Cyber war the Israelis were often overwhelmed by the attacks of Palestinians and their worldwide supporters, on the ground things seemed different. The Israeli army which was caught off-guard and unready for the challenge of the first *Intifada* was now better prepared and reacted massively to the eruption of Palestinian violence by adopting a combination of military and economic measures. Its troops and tanks encircled Palestinian towns and cities, it imposed closures, banned the 100,000 Palestinian workers from entering Israel, withheld customs funds due to the Palestinian Authority and stopped the supply of essential items to the occupied territories. It also banned the Palestinians from using their airport in the Gaza Strip, closed checkpoints between Palestinian-controlled areas and Jordan and Egypt and imposed restrictions on Arafat's movements. With the Palestinians resorting to arms – no longer restricting themselves as they did during the first *Intifada* to stones – the Israeli army felt less restrained and it unleashed its might, striking at the Palestinians with helicopters, even warplanes, tanks and snipers.

### **Attempts at a new cease-fire**

With violence in the occupied territories continuing, Prime Minister Barak dispatched Shimon Peres, the brain behind the Oslo and other Israeli-Palestinian agreements and the winner of a Nobel Peace Prize for his founding role in the peace process, to negotiate yet another cease-fire with Arafat. A deal emerged by

which Arafat agreed to end the shooting – though not the stones and the Molotov cocktails – and, in return, Peres would persuade Barak to pull back some of Israel’s tanks and troops from some friction points in the West Bank and the Gaza Strip. But on 2 November, just before Prime Minister Barak and Chairman Arafat were due to announce, simultaneously, their cease-fire agreement, a car bomb exploded at Jerusalem’s outdoor Mahane Yehuda market, killing two Israelis, wounding ten and thus burying the Peres-Arafat cease-fire.

The battle continued when on 20 November, an explosion near a bus station in Gush Katif, near the Gaza Strip, killed two Israelis and wounded eleven children. This brought swift and massive retaliation. Israeli forces attacked the Gaza Strip, cut it in two, inflicted heavy damage on infrastructure – electricity was cut in most parts of the Strip and the telephone system collapsed – and destroyed military positions, leaving behind eighty wounded Palestinians. International and Arab response was harsh. Israel was condemned for using excessive force, Egypt’s ambassador in Israel was recalled for ‘consultations’ and Jordan had deferred replacement of its Ambassador to Israel.

## BOMBS AND ASSASSINATIONS

Israel could ill afford such condemnation and one of the lessons learnt from this and other massive military attacks was that striking at the Palestinians should, preferably, be done in a way which would not invite international condemnation. Thus, in that month, November 2000, Israel began to resort to a more ‘discreet’ method of putting pressure on the Palestinians – political assassinations.

Israel, it should be mentioned, had for years – even before the establishment of the state – pursued a policy of assassination of political opponents. In the autumn of 1944, Lord Moyne, Britain’s Resident Minister in the Middle East, was assassinated

in Cairo by Jewish activists. In September 1948, there was the assassination in Jerusalem of Count Bernadotte, a UN mediator who put forward peace proposals which many in Israel believed to be against Israel's interests. On 11 July 1956, the Egyptian Colonel Mustapha Hafez, who was responsible for organizing and dispatching militant Palestinians to strike at Israel was assassinated in the Gaza Strip by Israeli agents.<sup>4</sup> On 10 April 1973, an Israeli commando, led by the future Prime Minister, Ehud Barak, assassinated in Beirut three PLO officials – Kamal Nasser, Yusif Najjar and Kamal Edwan, whom Israel held responsible for the killing of eleven Israeli athletes at the Munich Olympic games. Yasser Arafat's deputy, Abu Jihad, was killed in Tunis, in 1985, by an Israeli commando, aided by Mossad agents. These are only a few of the many assassinations carried out by Israel.

Now, with the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* under way a policy of liquidation, or what the Israelis officially termed 'targeted killing', 'pinpointing attackers', or 'neutralizing the organizers of attacks', namely Palestinian activists affiliated to Fatah, Hamas or Islamic Jihad, was approved by the Cabinet. The aim of this policy was threefold: to weaken the Palestinian command on the ground; to deter new potential Palestinian leaders from joining the ranks; and, perhaps most importantly, to foil and pre-empt Palestinian attackers – suicide bombers and other infiltrators – from carrying out their bombing missions in Israeli towns and cities. The methods to be used to assassinate were to range, according to circumstances, from sniper fire, through tank-fire and bombs planted in cars, to missiles fired from helicopters.

The killing of the Palestinian activist, Hussein Abayat, on 9 November 2000 at Beit Sahour near Bethlehem by anti-tank missiles fired at his car from helicopters, was the first known assassination carried out by Israel since the onset of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*. Imad Jamil Fares, a resident of Beit Sahour later recalled:

My house is about 10 metres from the site where Abayat was killed and I was at home. At around 11.45 in the morning, I suddenly heard an explosion . . . The windows of my house were broken and the shutters were damaged. When I looked out I saw a grey Mitsubishi on fire and the burnt body of the driver (Abayat – A.B.). Two women were lying on the ground near the car and appeared to be critically injured. Their faces were black, completely burnt and still bleeding.<sup>5</sup>

More assassinations followed. On 22 November Jamal Abed Al-Razeq, a 30-year-old Fatah activist, was assassinated. This, to be sure, did little to foil Palestinian attacks on Israeli cities, for on that very day a car bomb went off in Israel's northern town of Hadera, killing two and wounding fifty-five.

On the next day, Ibrahim Bani Audi was assassinated in Nablus by a bomb planted in his car and two-and-a-half weeks later, on 11 December, Anwar Mahmoud Humran was assassinated by Israeli snipers when he was leaving Al-Quds Open University in Nablus. Mayada Jum'a, an 18-year-old student, later recalled:

At around 1.30 p.m., while doing some studying in the balcony of my flat, I saw a man standing in the street, at a distance of about 10 metres from my house. He was on his own and appeared to be waiting for a taxi . . . Suddenly I heard two gunshots and saw that a bullet had hit the man in his leg. He fell on the ground and started screaming. The shots to his body continued however and did not cease . . . The shooting came from the Israeli army outpost on Mount Gerizim. I think that he must have been hit by twenty bullets or more.

On the next day, another Palestinian activist, Yousif Abu Swaye, was assassinated by Israeli snipers just outside his father's house in Al-Khader village near Bethlehem. His father, Ahmad Abu Swaye, later recalled:



I was expecting my son and his wife for the Iftar – the breaking of the fast during Ramadan. He had got married nine months ago and his wife was pregnant. She arrived first; Yousif had stopped at the Suleyman Pools for prayer and would arrive shortly. A short while later, at about 2.30 p.m., I heard gunshots. When I went out to see what was happening I heard five more gunshots and saw a man lying on the ground. At that stage I did not realize that the young man was my son. I rushed to help him but when I reached him he did not move. He was already dead. Twenty-one bullets hit him all over his body including the head, the neck and the chest.

On the next day, 13 December, yet another Palestinian activist, Abas al Awiwi, was assassinated by Israeli snipers when he was standing in front of the shoe factory where he used to work. Then on 14 December, Hani Abu Bakra, a 31-year-old Hamas activist was assassinated at the Gush Katif junction, near the Gaza Strip while driving a minibus with passengers on board.

Although, as has been made clear, the assassination policy had failed to prevent bombing attacks on Israel – on 28 December yet another bomb exploded on a bus near Tel Aviv wounding thirteen Israelis – Israel continued this policy with the assassination, on 31 December, of Dr Thabet Thabet. His wife, Dr Siham Thabet, later recalled:

My husband was killed when he was reversing his car outside our home in Tulkarem. Our home is in Area A but he was shot from Area C, from a distance of about 250 metres. Over twenty bullets hit him. Later it was found that three different kinds of ammunition had been used . . . I myself heard machine gun fire when I was on my way to work at the dental clinic. I would, however, never have imagined that what I heard was my husband being gunned down.

Palestinian eyewitnesses confirmed that a unit of Israeli soldiers, hiding in a truck, opened fire on Dr Thabet while he was reversing his car and that an Israeli military helicopter was hovering above the site at the time of the assassination. Denying that they had assassinated Dr Thabet, the Israelis claimed that he was killed in 'an exchange of fire'.

On 2 January 2001, two days after the assassination of Dr Thabet in Tulkarem, the 'liquidation policy' was discussed in the Knesset Foreign Affairs and Defence Committee. Some members of the committee openly questioned the legal and moral basis of this policy in which the victims have been killed without trial and without the chance of a fair legal process designed to examine the allegations brought forward against them. A senior Israeli security official said in this meeting:

We attack terrorists who set out to attack [Israeli civilians]. We identify the heads of squads and district commanders and attack them. This activity frightens and quiets a village, and as a result there are areas in which [Palestinian activists] are afraid to undertake activities.<sup>6</sup>

The Prime Minister, present at this meeting, justified the policy of assassination on the ground that Israel was in a state of war and had to fight terror with all available means. He said, 'We are at war . . . If people shoot at us and kill us, then our only option is to attack them'. The Chief of Staff, Lt. Gen. Shaul Mofaz, referred to a legal opinion issued by the military advocate, Menachem Finkelstein, in which the General had said that in 'exceptional' circumstances it was permissible to kill 'Palestinian terrorists'.

On 1 January 2001, a car bomb went off in West Jerusalem injuring a Jewish woman and, on 8 February, two cars bombs exploded at the heart of the ultra Orthodox neighbourhood of West Jerusalem. Five days later, on 13 February 2001, Maso'oud

Ayyad, a senior officer in Arafat's presidential guard, Force 17, was assassinated while driving his car near the Jabalya refugee camp in the Gaza Strip – his car was hit by three LAU missiles fired from an Israeli helicopter gunship. Prime Minister Barak said of this assassination: 'It would send a clear message that anyone intent on harming Israelis will not get away with it and the long arm of the Israeli Defence Forces will eventually find him and settle his score'. Six days later, on 19 February 2001, another Palestinian activist, Mahmoud Al Madani was assassinated by Israeli gunfire shortly after leaving a mosque in Balata Refugee Camp near Nablus. Mahmoud's brother Nur al Madani, a 21-year-old worker, later recalled:

At around 12.30 my brother Mahmoud and I were on our way back from the mosque. We were going to our grocery where my brother Mahmoud used to work . . . shortly before reaching the grocery we stopped for a chat with a car mechanic who owns a shop near ours. Suddenly, fire was opened at us and . . . a bullet penetrated the left shoulder of Mahmoud. My brother threw himself to the ground, rolled along and sought refuge in the store. However, after a little while he went out of the store because he could not stand the pain. At that moment heavy gunfire resumed and my brother was hit by three more bullets in the chest and the waist. . . . Once the gunfire stopped we took him by car to Hospital in Nablus. . . . We learnt from the doctors that the bullets had exploded or fragmented inside causing tremendous damage to internal organs. At around 6.30 p.m. he was pronounced dead.

Israel's policy of assassination was to continue throughout the weeks and months ahead without, however, achieving its principal goal, namely hampering terrorist attacks and suicide bombs in Israeli towns and cities.

## A NEW LEADERSHIP

The failure of the Camp David summit and the ensuing war in the occupied territories and in Israel itself where Palestinian suicide bombers brought war to the very doorstep of citizens, ended Israelis' romance with peace and their confidence in their dovish Prime Minister Barak who, after rising to power on an enormous wave of optimism and euphoria, had failed in his attempts to bring about peace. By now Israelis even blamed Barak for bringing war in his eagerness to make peace. Growing public frustration was manifested when, in February 2001, Israelis went to the polls and elected a new Prime Minister – Ariel Sharon – the former General, Defence Minister during the disastrous 1982 invasion of Lebanon and the man who, by his provocative visit to the Temple Mount in Jerusalem on 28 September had originally sparked off the war in the occupied territories.

By the time Ariel Sharon took over as Prime Minister – he presented his coalition government to the Knesset on 7 March – what began as a series of confrontations between Palestinian demonstrators and Israeli security forces, had evolved into a wider array of violent actions and responses. There had been growing exchanges of fire between built-up areas, sniping incidents and clashes between Jewish settlers and Palestinians and car bombs and suicide bomb attacks in Israeli towns and cities.

Compared with his predecessor Barak, who sought a sweeping peace deal to end the Arab-Israeli conflict, Sharon's goals as Israel's Prime Minister were much more modest. He wanted to end the violence that had raged since September 2000, restore stability and – providing that the calm held – to open negotiations on a limited interim agreement with the Palestinians. Believing that eventually the Palestinians would crack under the pressure, Sharon increased Israel's use of economic pressure and military force. He showed readiness to increase the pressure even

further by dispatching F-16 warplanes to bomb targets in the West Bank city of Nablus in the wake of a suicide bomber attack in Netanya, on 18 May, which left five Israelis killed and over thirty injured. Sharon's government also stepped up the policy of assassination of Palestinian activists.

## THE MITCHELL REPORT

Meanwhile, on 20 May 2001, the Mitchell Report was published. We should recall that at the October 1999 summit meeting at Sharm el-Sheikh which was convened by President Clinton, it was decided to appoint a commission to investigate the causes of the war in the occupied territories and suggest ways of ending it.

Chaired by George J. Mitchell, former member and majority leader of the United States Senate, who had achieved success in mediating the Northern Ireland conflict, the commission visited the region – Israel and the occupied territories – where it found out that 'despite their long history and close proximity, some Israelis and Palestinians seem not to fully appreciate each other's problems and concerns'. It also realized that 'Fear, hate, anger, and frustration have risen on both sides' and that 'so much has been achieved' but also 'so much is at risk' and that if the parties were to succeed in completing their journey for peace then 'agreed commitments must be implemented, international law respected'.<sup>7</sup>

The Mitchell report provided for a series of steps beginning with a cessation of hostilities through a 'cooling off period' and the implementation of 'confidence building measures' gradually leading to a resumption of peace talks between Israelis and Palestinians. It called on the Palestinian Authority to make clear to Palestinians and Israelis through concrete action that terrorism is unacceptable and to make a '100 per cent effort to prevent terrorist operations'. The Israelis were called upon to 'freeze all

settlement activity, including the natural growth of existing settlements' and Israel was also called upon to be more measured and careful in the use of force and to try to 'minimize casualties'. It urged the Palestinian Authority to prevent gunmen from using Palestinian populated areas to fire upon Israeli populated areas and IDF positions, a tactic which 'places civilians on both sides at unnecessary risk'. The report also called on Israel 'to lift closures, transfer to the Palestinian Authority all tax revenues owed, and permit Palestinians who had been employed in Israel to return to their jobs and to ensure that security forces and settlers refrain from destruction of homes and roads, as well as trees and other agricultural property in Palestinian areas'. Because Israel suspected that some Palestinian workers entering Israel were in fact terrorists, the report called on the Palestinian Authority to ensure that 'Palestinian workers employed within Israel are fully vetted and free of connections to organizations engaged in terrorism'. Both sides, in the light of damage inflicted on holy sites, were called upon to consider a 'joint undertaking to preserve and protect holy places' and to endorse and support the work of Palestinian and Israeli non-governmental organisations involved in cross-community initiatives linking the two people.

It was a balanced report with sensible recommendations. Prime Minister Sharon responded swiftly by declaring, on 22 May, a unilateral cease-fire. He pledged that the IDF would only shoot in self-defence and would no longer initiate operations. Response from the Palestinians, on the ground, was less than forthcoming and in a Tel-Aviv nightclub, on 1 June, a suicide bomber blew himself up killing twenty one Israelis, mostly teenagers. International pressure was soon mounting on Arafat to declare an immediate cease-fire which he did on 2 June. He insisted, though, that he regarded himself responsible for the cease-fire only in areas under his full control (Areas A) and that he would not re-arrest Hamas and Islamic Jihad militants, largely

responsible for the attack in Tel-Aviv and other suicide bombing attacks in Israel. Now, with both sides agreeing to a cease-fire, it was necessary to stabilize it. This, as we shall now see, was done through American diplomacy.

## THE TENET CEASE-FIRE PLAN

In early June, the Bush administration, which after the failure of the intense mediation effort of former president Bill Clinton had adopted a hands-off approach to the Middle East conflict, now shifted its policy and dispatched CIA Director George Tenet to the region. His mission was to merge the cease-fires declared separately by Sharon and Arafat, to produce a signed agreement, restore security cooperation and create the basis for the implementation of the Mitchell Report, leading to political peace talks to sort out the Israeli-Palestinian conflict. After six days of intensive negotiations a cease-fire agreement, the so-called, 'Tenet Cease-Fire Plan of 13 June 2001' or 'The Tenet Understanding' emerged. Here are some of its main points:

- 1 The GOI (Government of Israel – AB) and the PA (Palestinian Authority – AB) will immediately resume security cooperation.
  - A senior-level meeting of Israeli, Palestinian, and US security officials will be held immediately and will reconvene at least once a week, with mandatory participation by designated senior officials.
  - . . . As soon as the security situation permits, barriers to effective cooperation – which include the erection of walls between the Israeli and Palestinian sides – will be eliminated and joint Israeli-Palestinian patrols will be reinitiated.
  - US-supplied video conferencing systems will be pro-

vided to senior-level Israeli and Palestinian officials to facilitate frequent dialogue and security cooperation.

- 2 Both sides will take immediate measures to enforce strict adherence to the declared cease-fire and to stabilize the security environment.
  - . . . Israel will not conduct attacks of any kind against the Palestinian Authority Ra'is facilities . . .
  - The PA will move immediately to apprehend, question, and incarcerate terrorists . . .
  - Israel will release all Palestinians arrested in security sweeps who have no association with terrorist activities.
  - . . . the PA will stop any Palestinian security officials from inciting, aiding, abetting, or conducting attacks against Israeli targets, including settlers.
  - . . . Israeli forces will not conduct "proactive" security operations in areas under the control of the PA or attack against innocent civilian targets.
  - The GOI will re-institute military police investigations into Palestinian deaths resulting from IDF actions . . . in incidents not involving terrorism.
  
- 3 Palestinian and Israeli security officials will use the security committee to provide each other, as well as designated US officials, with terrorist threat information . . .
  - Legitimate terrorist and threat information will be acted upon immediately . . .
  - The PA will undertake preemptive operations against terrorists, terrorist safe houses, arms depots, and mortar factories . . .
  - Israeli authorities will take action against Israeli citizens inciting, carrying out, or planning to carry out violence against Palestinians . . .



- 4 The PA and GOI will move aggressively to prevent individuals and groups from using areas under their respective control to carry out acts of violence . . .
  - . . . Palestinian and Israeli security officials will identify and agree to the practical measures needed to enforce “no demonstration zones” and “buffer zones” around flash points to reduce opportunities for confrontation . . .
  - . . . Palestinian and Israeli security officials will make a concerted effort to locate and confiscate illegal weapons, including mortars, rockets, and explosives, in areas under their respective control . . . intensive efforts will be made to prevent smuggling and illegal production of weapons . . .
  - The Israeli Defence Forces (IDF) will adopt additional non-lethal measures to deal with Palestinian crowds and demonstrators, and more generally, seek to minimize the danger to lives and property of Palestinian civilians in responding to violence.
- 5 The GOI and PA . . . will forge – within one week of the commencement of security committee meetings and resumption of security cooperation – an agreed-upon schedule to implement the complete redeployment of IDF forces to positions held before 28 September 2000.
- 6 Within one week of the commencement of security committee meetings and resumption of security cooperation, a specific time line will be developed for the lifting of internal closures as well as for the reopening of internal roads, the Allenby Bridge, Gaza Airport, Port of Gaza, and border crossings. Security checkpoints will be minimized . . .
  - The parties pledge that even if untoward events occur,

security cooperation will continue through the joint security committee.<sup>8</sup>

Israel officially, though with 'some reservations', accepted the plan on 12 June and the Palestinians gave a 'conditional approval' on the 13<sup>th</sup>. The significance of the Tenet Cease-Fire Plan was that with the Mitchell Report, it became the blueprint to end the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* and restore political negotiations between Israelis and Palestinians.

But comprehensive as this plan was it still failed to halt the violence in the occupied territories and suicide attacks on Israel itself. Thus, on 9 August 2001, a Palestinian suicide bomber – a 5–10 kilograms bomb packed with nails, screws and bolts strapped to his waist – blew himself up at the Sbarro Pizzeria in downtown Jerusalem, killing fifteen and wounding 130. Israel responded on the next day by seizing the Orient House, the unofficial Palestinian headquarters in Jerusalem and a symbol of Palestinian aspirations for an independent state; it also closed down nine other Palestinian buildings belonging to the Palestinian Authority. Two Israeli F-16s fired rockets at police headquarters in Ramallah destroying it and tanks levelled a Gaza Strip police position. The vicious circle of violence continued when, on 13 August, another suicide bomb attack at the Wall Street Café in Kiryat Motzkin, a Haifa suburb, left fifteen Israelis injured.

The Palestinians who carried out the attacks in Jerusalem and Haifa had come from Jenin, a Palestinian town in the West Bank which was handed over to the Palestinian Authority in 1995 under the interim peace accord agreed at the Oslo peace talks. Jenin now became the prime target and, on 14 August 2001, Israeli troops and tanks moved into the town – the first major Israeli incursion into Palestinian-controlled area since the beginning of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*. With helicopters hovering above and under the cover of tanks, armoured bulldozers destroyed a Palestinian police station and two checkpoints and took up positions

outside the governor's residence before withdrawing from the town. And the 'targeted killings' of leading Palestinians continued when, on 27 August 2001, Israeli helicopters fired two laser-guided missiles into the West Bank office of Abu Ali Mustafa, Secretary General of the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine, killing him. He was, to date, the highest ranking Palestinian leader to be assassinated by Israel during the Al-Aqsa Intifada.

### **A new attempt at a cease-fire**

On 11 September 2001, terrorists of the Bin-Laden Al Qa'eda group carried out a massive attack on New York and Washington, killing more than 3,000 civilians and prompting President Bush to embark on an anti-terror campaign. The task of building a large anti-terror coalition started in earnest and growing pressure was applied on Israel to calm down her conflict with the Palestinians, which seemed essential if moderate Arab states were to join the US-led coalition against terrorism.

Under intense American pressure, Israel's Foreign Minister Shimon Peres and Palestinian Authority Chairman Arafat met in the Gaza Strip International airport, on 26 September, to hold truce talks. There was no News Conference at the end of the two-and-a-half hour talks but in a joint communiqué Peres and Arafat pledged to resume security coordination and they renewed their commitment to the 'Tenet Understanding', which provided for a cease-fire that should pave the way for the implementation of the Mitchell Report. Arafat pledged to arrest suspected militants and to collect illegal weapons, while Peres committed himself to begin lifting closures that had severely disrupted daily life in the Palestinian areas and redeploy Israeli forces away from Palestinian urban centres. Peres and Arafat also agreed to meet again 'in a week or so'.

But, as before, events on the ground foiled any attempt to

implement a lasting cease-fire and embark on political talks. Thus, on 2 October at around 5.30 p.m., Palestinians infiltrated the Jewish settlement of Eiei Sinai in the Gaza Strip, opened fire, killed two Israelis and wounded at least fifteen. Subsequently, Prime Minister Sharon suspended the Peres-Arafat cease-fire and dispatched forces to attack the Gaza Strip, where six Palestinians were killed and six wounded as Israeli troops and armoured vehicles seized a stretch of Palestinian-controlled land outside the settlement. Yet another cease-fire was dead and buried.

### A TIT-FOR-TAT

A steep escalation of violence followed the assassination, on 17 October 2001, of Israel's Minister of Tourism, Rehavam Ze'evi, by Palestinian members of the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine. They stalked a corridor of the Jerusalem Hyatt hotel and shot the minister with two bullets.

Ze'evi, a former General, was a right-wing politician and leader of the Moledet ('Homeland') political party which advocated the 'transfer' of Palestinians from the West Bank and Gaza Strip. Ze'evi's inflammatory rhetoric – he once referred to Palestinians as 'lice' – and his right wing political views, upset the Palestinians who turned him into a prime target. His killing, so the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine later stated, was a tit-for-tat retaliation for Israel's assassination of the leader of the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine, Abu Ali Mustafa, on 27 August.

Ze'evi's assassination shocked the nation for although politically many Israelis disliked his policies, he was, nevertheless, the first top politician to be killed at Arab hands since Israel's birth. But rather than taking responsibility for having brought about the assassination of its minister, which clearly arose directly from Israel's own policy of assassinating Palestinians, the Cabinet threw the blame on Arafat. It issued him with an ultimatum:

either to arrest Ze'evi's assassins or to be seen officially as the head of 'an entity supporting and sponsoring terror' – not a title one would desire in the wake of the 11 September terrorist attack on America.

It was an impossible demand on Arafat for how would the Palestinian public regard him if he accepted Sharon's dictate and arrested the assassins? And thus with Arafat dragging his feet and failing to respond to Israel's ultimatum and, in fact, calling on Israel to abandon her policy of assassination of Palestinians, Prime Minister Sharon ordered Israeli forces to invade and re-occupy cities and towns under direct Palestinian Authority control.

Tanks and troops, supported by helicopters, rolled into areas of Ramallah, Jenin, Bethlehem, Beit Jala, Beit Sahour, Qalquilya and Tulkarem, where they attacked Palestinian positions, seized buildings, imposed curfews, conducted patrols and arrested militants. At the same time, the build up of forces on the edges of other Palestinian cities, including Nablus and Hebron, continued. This severe deterioration of relationships between Israel and the Palestinian Authority brought worldwide condemnation on Israel and led to a call from the American President, upset by the continuation of violence in the Middle East at a time when calm was a priority as the US conducted its war against terrorism, 'to leave these territories and never return to there'.

Gradually, the Israelis began pulling out of the seven occupied areas transferring them to Palestinian security forces though pledging to return should the Palestinians failed to stop terrorism against Israel, which continued anyway. In the course of this massive military operation, eighty-five Palestinians were arrested, hundreds were injured and eighty-five were killed of whom fifteen were assassinated.

## THE BALANCE SHEET AND ISRAELI SOCIETY

The *Al-Aqsa intifada* was a bloody affair. From 28 September, the day it started to 27 October 2001, 505 Palestinian civilians were killed by gunfire from Israeli security forces, of these civilians 139 were minors under the age of 18 and at least forty of those killed were assassinated. In addition, 113 Palestinian security forces personnel were shot dead by Israeli security forces, eleven Palestinian civilians were killed by Israeli civilians, at least eighteen Palestinian civilians were killed by Palestinian civilians (on suspicion of collaboration with Israel) and there were a few more casualties caught up in the cross fire between Israelis and Palestinians. On the Israeli side in same period, seventy civilians were killed by Palestinian fire, five of them were minors under the age of 17. Twenty-seven members of the Israeli security forces were killed by Palestinian civilians, eight members of the security forces were killed by gunfire from Palestinian security forces. Within Israel proper, fifty-five Israeli civilians and thirteen security personnel were killed by Palestinians, twenty-two of them minors under the age of 18. The damage to Palestinian property was immense. According to Palestinian sources in the period from 28 September 2000 to 13 September 2001, Israeli shelling caused extensive damage to 4,000 buildings in the occupied territories, 25,000 olive and fruit trees were uprooted and 42,000 acres of land bulldozed.

How did the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* affect Israeli society and how much did it change attitudes in Israel towards Palestinians and the peace process?

In polls conducted six months into this war, 58 per cent of Israelis said that their opinion of the Palestinians had changed for the worse. Some 37 per cent reported that the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* caused them to adopt more hawkish opinions as against a mere 13 per cent who said they became more dovish; clearly, the centre of gravity in Israel's political map has shifted, as a result of

the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*, to the right. As for the prospects for peace, 63 per cent of Israelis said that it was impossible to reach a peace agreement with the Palestinians. A very large majority of Israelis believed, according to these polls, in the greater use of force with 71 per cent supporting the assassination of Palestinian leaders connected to terrorist acts against Israel.<sup>9</sup> Among Israelis Arafat was the chief political casualty of the *Intifada*, completely losing his status as a man of peace even among Israelis from the left, mainly from Meretz, the most prominent Israeli peace camp party.

Whereas the first *Intifada* of 1987–93 strongly divided Israeli society between the camp of peace and that of war, the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*, to a certain degree, united the nation, mainly as a result of frustration on the left resulting from what seemed a non-compromising Palestinian stance and the growing conviction among Israelis – be it true or not – that the left's traditional formula for peace, namely returning land to Arab hands, did not yield fruit.

Relations between Jewish Israelis and Arab Israelis, those 17 per cent of the population living within Israel proper, deteriorated as a result of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* and tensions grew substantially between the communities. In polls, 55 per cent of Israeli Jews reported that their opinion of the Israeli Arabs who, as shown before, had taken direct action against Israel at the start of the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*, had deteriorated. There were some positive aspects, however, for in the process of trying to understand the reasons behind the Israeli Arabs' rioting, many Israeli Jews came to realize that this was a reaction not only to feelings of solidarity with their brethren under military occupation, but also to historic prejudices. Now, Jewish Israelis came to see that 'our Arabs', as they often dubbed the Arabs of Israel, were, in fact, second class citizens, historically discriminated against, their average income the lowest of any other ethnic group in the country and their infant mortality rate almost twice as high as for Jews (9.6 per 1,000 births, compared with 5.3).

Perhaps above all, the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* increased the sense of frustration within Israeli society – as it did among Palestinians – with a peace process which failed to live up to expectations and rather than producing security, brought war and devastation to the Israelis' own doorstep.

At the time of writing the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* continues.



# 8

---

## CONCLUSIONS

Wars between Arabs and Israelis have taken place from the day the state of Israel was established on the land of Palestine in May 1948, dominating the headlines and featuring prominently in books about Israel. Separate and short, the Israeli–Arab wars can be seen, in a historical perspective, as a single war with a single continuity, where land – first the land of Palestine and then lands occupied by Israel in subsequent wars – is identified as the main – though not exclusive – trigger to the repeating conflagrations. The balance sheet, after more than fifty years of Israeli–Arab conflict, indicates that on the battlefield there has been no clear victor – neither Arab nor Israeli.

In the war of 1948, the first contest between the parties, Israel held its ground and even defeated Egypt and Lebanon. But the Jordanians and Syrians did well; the former managed to occupy the West Bank and the latter to cross the international border and occupy lands which had been allotted to the Jews by the UN in the 29 November 1947 Partition Plan (Chapter 1). Then in 1956, Israel struck hard at Egypt (Chapter 2), and eleven years

later in the war of June 1967 she defeated Egypt, Jordan and Syria (Chapter 3). However, in the 1968–70 War of Attrition along the Suez Canal, there was no clear winner (Chapter 3), as was also the case in the October 1973 Yom Kippur War, where Egypt and Syria managed to win an important battle in the initial phase of the conflict but were later forced to yield their gains to the victorious Israelis (Chapter 4). In the war of 1982 in Lebanon, Israel struck hard at the Syrians and the PLO, forcing the latter out of the country and into exile; but this war was still considered a disastrous failure, especially after the assassination of Israel's protégé Bashir Gemayel, and the subsequent massacre of Palestinians in the refugee camps of Sabra and Shatilla (Chapter 5). Then, during the years of the *Intifada*, Israel failed to contain the disturbances, and the Palestinian uprising which began in 1987 was ended temporarily after the signing of the Oslo Agreement in 1993 (Chapter 6), only to start again with much more ferocity in 2000 (Chapter 7).

Wars, however, are a clash not only of arms but of words, and if, as we have just stated, there was no victor on the battlefield, there was indeed a clear victor in the war of words – Israel. For throughout the first decades of the conflict Israel's leaders had managed – most successfully – to portray Israel as the injured party and to instil in the minds of their fellow Israelis, and of the world in general, the idea that Israel was always the victim of Arab aggression. But this was only partially true, for while in 1948 the newborn state of Israel was indeed the victim of Arab aggression and attempts to destroy her (Chapter 1), eight years later it was Israel who, together with France and Britain, initiated and launched a war against Egypt (Chapter 2). Then in 1967, it was again Israel who forced war upon Egypt and Syria – Jordan was the only country to attack Israel in this war (Chapter 3). However, immediately after this conflict, it was President Nasser of Egypt who imposed a War of Attrition on Israel, and later, on Yom Kippur 1973, Egypt – now led by Nasser's successor Sadat –

and Syria opened fire, attacking Israel on two fronts (Chapters 3 and 4). In the summer of 1982 it was again Israel who started a war, this time in Lebanon (Chapter 5); but five years later it was the Palestinians in the West Bank and the Gaza Strip who forced a stone-throwing war upon the Israeli occupying forces (Chapter 6), and in 2000 they repeated this exercise though by now they resorted to arms (Chapter 7).

These wars – and we must include preparations for war, even when there was no resulting conflict – cost a fortune and caused great damage, suffering and sorrow to the Israeli people as it did to the Arabs; but they also proved to be the bond – the very cement – which kept the Israelis together. For, especially during the first decades of the state, Israel was the gathering place of Jewish immigrants from the four corners of the earth, and rather than a homogeneous society it was an assembly of communities and diverse people, some of whom were still ‘adding up the grocery bill in Arabic; others dreaming in Yiddish and singing to their children lullabies in English or Russian’.<sup>1</sup> And, as shown in Chapter 2, it was the transformation of these people into a nation-in-arms, and the establishment of a military system where almost every citizen – male and female – was a trained soldier and a reservist, that transformed the Israeli-born *Sabra*, the orthodox Jew from New York, the scientist from London, the silversmith from Yemen, the lawyer from Egypt and the small shopkeeper from Morocco – from individuals into a society and a nation. And above all, what kept this Israeli organism together and helped rally Israelis round the flag and its leadership, was a deep sense of external danger and the fear that the Arabs intended and would try to destroy Israel, and that to cope with this problem Israelis must stick together and take up arms whenever its leadership requested them to do so. As Abba Eban, an intelligent and well informed eyewitness, wrote in his book *My Country*: ‘The Israeli scene is often turbulent, contentious and effervescent but when *danger threatens* . . . the ranks tighten’.<sup>2</sup>

Indeed, throughout the formative years of the state of Israel, threatening declarations by Arab leaders reinforced the tendency of the Israeli leadership to exaggerate the external threat in order to engender a sense of insecurity among Israelis, which in turn made them very willing to fight in wars and to finance them. But, as we have shown, during the mid- and late 1970s there were many changes in Israel, most notably the growing sense that her place in the Middle East was now more secure, and that the external threat was diminishing. This change of mood came about not only because the IDF had managed to prove its efficiency and ability to defend the country; it was also the result of the beginning of a process of reconciliation between Israeli and Arab, evidenced by the signing of a peace accord between Israel and Egypt in 1979, which meant that Egypt – the strongest of Israel’s foes – was removed from the circle of war; with this, the danger to Israel’s existence declined dramatically (Chapter 4). In a 1986 survey, 89 per cent of Israelis expressed confidence in Israel’s long-term existence, and in 1987 this figure rose to 96 per cent.

The experience of the Holocaust, which had taken place just a few years before Israel was established, had a strong impact on attitudes in Israel during the first decades of the state. Indeed, within Israeli society the Holocaust survivors became living testimony to what could be the fate of Israelis if they failed to defend themselves. Just how strongly this trauma affected Israelis is shown by *The Seventh Day: Soldiers Talk about the Six Day War*, which became a bestseller in Israel after the 1967 war, and was a book in which returning soldiers talked about their experiences and thoughts. One of these soldiers, Yariv Ben-Aharon, said, in what seems to represent the general opinion in Israel at the time:

people believed [before the outbreak of the June 1967 war] that we would be exterminated if we lost the war. . . . We got this idea – or inherited it – from the concentration camps. . . .

Genocide – it's a feasible notion. . . . This is the lesson of the gas chambers.<sup>3</sup>

But it was after, and as a result of, the Six Day War that attitudes in Israel began to change, and with the gradual disappearance of the Holocaust generation the over-sensitivity of Israelis to the danger of total extermination was also somehow diminished. For many of the older generation of Israelis, the Holocaust was the central experience of their lives, and their thoughts and actions were dominated by the knowledge that what had happened once could happen again, an idea which was much used by Israeli politicians throughout the years in order to rally the people. But the younger generation of Israelis, those born in the 1970s and in later years, saw the world in less threatening colours than did their parents. They may have heard anecdotes of the Holocaust from their elders, but they were more likely to learn of it from books, and it did not dominate their actions and worldview as it did their parents'. For the sons and daughters of non-European Israelis, the Holocaust seemed an even more remote event. In a survey carried out in 1986, 82 per cent of Israelis thought there was absolutely no chance (42 per cent) or only little chance (40 per cent) that the Jewish people would face another Holocaust.

Throughout the years another important change took place within Israel, namely a shift from collective ideals and priorities to individual ones. Indeed, while the early generation of Israelis – the builders and founders of the state – possessed an ideological sense of mission and took it for granted that the state came before the welfare of the individual, the younger generation of Israelis saw things differently. For them, individual priorities often seemed more important than collective ones, and in contrast with their parents they were motivated by their individual achievements rather than by patriotic values. Thus while the older generation was willing to pay a heavy price in terms of

taxation and sacrifice of social services in order to subsidize expensive wars, the younger generation was much more reluctant to do so. In 1987, two thirds of Israelis stated that they would not support social services cuts in order to increase the defence budget, and in 1992 only 24 per cent of Israelis said they would be willing to finance increased defence spending.

These changes in the environment and within Israeli society were significant in that they had a strong effect on the attitudes and behaviour of Israelis and their willingness to fight in wars and pay for them. Indeed, as has been shown in previous chapters, the perception of a decreasing external threat, the disappearance of the Holocaust generation and a shift from collective ideals and priorities to individual ones, meant that a more confident Israeli nation, less fearful for its very existence and less traumatized and haunted by its past, was also showing itself to be less single-minded and more reluctant to take up arms and sacrifice, as was clearly demonstrated in Lebanon in 1982 and during the years of the Palestinian uprising in the occupied territories between 1987 and 1993, and as of 2000.

## NOTES

### 1 THE 1947–9 WAR

- 1 J. K. Galbraith, *The Great Crash 1929* (London, 1961) 25.
- 2 *The Complete Diaries of Theodor Herzl, Vol. I* (New York, 1960) 343 (entry for 12 June 1895).
- 3 A. Koestler, *Promise and Fulfilment, Palestine 1917–1949* (London, 1983) 5.
- 4 Letter of Ben Gurion to his wife Paula, as quoted in A. Shlaim, *Collusion across the Jordan* (Oxford, 1988) 17.
- 5 Interview with Hazem Zaki Nuseibeh, 28 February 1997, Amman, BLA [Brian Lapping Associates, interview carried out by this production company and kept at the Liddell Hart Centre, King's College, London].
- 6 J. Vatikiotis, *Among Arabs and Jews* (London, 1983) 59.
- 7 R. Fisk, 'Flirting with the enemy', *Independent*, 20 February 1999.
- 8 D. Ben Gurion, *Diary of War*, entry for 23 February 1948 (Hebrew).
- 9 Interview with Hazem Zaki Nuseibeh.
- 10 D. Ben Gurion, *Diary of War* (Tel Aviv, 1982), entry for 19 December 1948 (Hebrew).
- 11 D. Ben Gurion, *Diary of War*, entry for 10 November 1948 (Hebrew).
- 12 D. Ben Gurion, *Diaries*, entry for 27 April 1953, in Ben Gurion Archive (BGA), Sde Boker. Full details of casualties can be found in A.

- Bregman, 'Civil–military relations in Israel: military influence on war policy', Ph.D. dissertation (Department of War Studies, King's College London, 1993) 113, n15.
- 13 Gideon Rafael to author, Jerusalem, 19 January 1997.
  - 14 D. Ben Gurion, *Diary of War*, entry for 15 May 1948 (Hebrew).
  - 15 J. B. Glubb, *A Soldier with the Arabs* (London, 1958) 195.
  - 16 References to the development of chemical weapons can be found in Ben Gurion's *Diary of War*, entries for 1 June, 2 June, 20 June 1948 (Hebrew).
  - 17 General Shlomo Shamir to author, Tel Aviv, 17 December 1991.
  - 18 B. Lapping, *End of Empire* (London, 1989) 189.
  - 19 J. B. Glubb, *A Soldier with the Arabs*, 96.
  - 20 Interview with Mohsein Abdel Khalek, Cairo, 19 March 1996, BLA.
  - 21 Interview with Abdel Ghani Kanout, Damascus, 16 October 1996, BLA.
  - 22 Interview with Adel Sabit, 23 February 1997; and with Mourad Ghaleb, 20 March 1996, Cairo, BLA.
  - 23 J. B. Glubb, *A Soldier with the Arabs*, 79.
  - 24 P. Bernadotte, *To Jerusalem* (Jerusalem, 1952) 132 and 137 (Hebrew).
  - 25 *New York Times*, 23 October 1979. This censored piece also appears in A. Bregman and J. el-Tahri, *The Fifty Years War* (London, 1998) 40.
  - 26 Interview with George Habash, Damascus, 6 October 1996, BLA.
  - 27 Ben Gurion, in *Transcript of the Meeting of the 16th June 1948*, 21–2, in the author's archive (Hebrew).
  - 28 Y. Rabin, *Pinkas Sherut* (Tel Aviv, 1979) 63 (Hebrew).
  - 29 M. Dayan, *Story of my Life* (London, 1976) 146.
  - 30 The number 5.4 million (of them about 1.5 million children) instead of the commonly known figure of 6 million Jews, is based on the fact that at least 10 per cent of the Jews who were massacred in the Holocaust were Christians, i.e. Jews who had converted to Christianity. For the Nazis, however, a Jew converted to Christianity was still a 'full Jew' (*Volljude*); see B. Lewis, *Semites and anti-Semites* (London, 1986) 20. In the Holocaust about one third of world Jewry perished.
  - 31 D. Ben Gurion, *Diary of War*, entries for 5 July, 15 July and 10 November 1948 (Hebrew).
  - 32 G. Rothenberg, *The Anatomy of the Israeli Army* (London, 1979) 67.
  - 33 B. Lewis, *Semites and Anti-Semites*, 23.



## 2 A NATION IN ARMS 1949–67

- 1 D. Ben Gurion, *Diary of War*, entry for 26 and 27 November 1948 (Hebrew).
- 2 D. Ben Gurion, speech in the Knesset, 19 August 1952 (Hebrew) (my emphasis).
- 3 D. Ben Gurion, as cited in G. Rothenberg, *The Anatomy of the Israeli Army*, 71.
- 4 A. Yaniv, *Deterrence without the Bomb* (Massachusetts, 1987) 58.
- 5 J. B. Glubb, *A Soldier with the Arabs*, 303.
- 6 On the Gaza raid, see Ariel Sharon to author, Jerusalem, 7 April 1991; Sharon to author, Havat Ha'shikmim, 1 March 1997.
- 7 On 'Operation Kinneret', see Ariel Sharon to author, Jerusalem, 7 April 1991.
- 8 A. Eban, *My Country: the Story of Modern Israel* (London, 1973). 125–6.
- 9 M. Dayan, *Diary of the Sinai Campaign* (London, 1965) 60–1; for more on the planning of the campaign with the French and British, see Shimon Peres to author, Jerusalem, 11 March 1991.
- 10 A. Eban, *My Country*, 141.
- 11 Y. Rabin, *Pinkas Sherut*, 97 (Hebrew).
- 12 G. Rothenberg, *The Anatomy of the Israeli Army*, 116.

## 3 THE SIX BAD YEARS 1967–73

- 1 Memorandum of conversation, 31 January 1967, LBJ Library, E.O.12356, sec. 3.4, NEJ 93–120.
- 2 E. Haber, *Today War Will Break Out: The Reminiscences of Brig. Gen. Yisrael Lior, Aide-de-Camp to Prime Ministers Levi Eshkol and Golda Meir* (Tel Aviv, 1987) 146 (Hebrew).
- 3 Nasser's speech at UAR Advanced Air Headquarters, 25 May 1967, in W. Laqueur and B. Rubin (eds) *The Israel-Arab Reader: A Documentary History of the Middle East Conflict* (London, 1995) 144–9.
- 4 Interview given by Moshe Dayan in 1976 to Rami Tal and published in *Yediot Aharonot*, 27 April 1997 (Hebrew).
- 5 Interview with Egyptian general Ahmed Fakher, Cairo, 27 February 1997, BLA.
- 6 Interview with Mohammed Fawzi, Cairo, 28 February 1997, BLA.
- 7 Interview with Syrian general Abdel Razzak Al-Dardari, Damascus, n.d. BLA.

- 8 A. Eban, *My Country*, 198.
- 9 Interview with Evgeny Pyrlin, Moscow, March 1997, BLA.
- 10 'Soviet official's comments on Soviet policy on the Middle East war – CIA report of conversation with Soviet official re June War', LBJ Library, 82–156, doc. 8420.
- 11 Nasser to Eric Rouleau, *The Times*, 19 February 1970.
- 12 Nasser's speech at UAR Advanced Air Headquarters, 25 May 1967; also interview with Nasser, *World in Action*, 29 May 1967.
- 13 Quoted in S. Segev, *Sadin Adom: The Six Day War* (Tel Aviv, 1967) 51 (Hebrew).
- 14 A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity: An Autobiography* (New York, 1977) 172.
- 15 A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity*, 173.
- 16 Interview with King Hussein, Amman, 2 March 1997; also an interview with Jordan's Prime Minister Zaid al Rifai, Amman, 6 March 1997, BLA.
- 17 R. Gilo (ed.) *Bamachane – The IDF Journal: 30 Years to the Six Day War*, 11 (Hebrew).
- 18 Nasser's speech to Arab trade unionists, 26 May 1967, in W. Laqueur and B. Rubin (eds) *The Israel-Arab Reader*, 149–52.
- 19 Uzi Narkiss to author, Jerusalem, 21 January 1997.
- 20 Former general Matityahu Peled to author, Tel Aviv, 7 April 1991.
- 21 A. Eban, *My Country*, 214.
- 22 About how and why, see Miriam Eshkol to author, Jerusalem, 30 January 1997.
- 23 M. Dayan, *Story of my Life*, 341.
- 24 Aharon Yariv to author, Tel Aviv, 27 March 1991; also letter from Aharon Yariv to author, 2 June 1992, Tel Aviv (Hebrew).
- 25 Interview with Minister of War Shams el-Din Badran, London, 5 June 1997, BLA.
- 26 Interview with Pavel Akopov Sememovich, Moscow, March 1997, BLA. Akopov was present at the meeting between Kosygin and Badran. He was a Soviet diplomat and worked for the Middle East desk of the Politburo.
- 27 Interview with President Nasser, 29 May 1967, *World in Action*, tape number 1148; see also interview with Minister of War Shams el-Din Badran.
- 28 Interview with Egyptian Minister of War Shams el-Din Badran.
- 29 From Amit's report to the cabinet, Meir Amit's archive.
- 30 Meir Amit to author, Ramat Gan, 20 January 1997; also interview with Robert McNamara, 21 April 1997, Washington, BLA.

- 31 Yitzhak Rabin to author, Tel Aviv, 21 March 1991.
- 32 Ezer Weizman to author, Jerusalem, 3 March 1997.
- 33 Interview with King Hussein of Jordan, Amman, 2 March 1997, BLA.
- 34 J. Lunt, *Hussein of Jordan* (London, 1989) 144.
- 35 The conversation between Nasser and the King can be found in A. Bregman and J. el-Tahri, *The Fifty Years War*, 90; also an off-the-record interview with the King, Amman, 28 January 1997, in the author's archive; also an interview with Zaid al-Rifai, Amman, 6 March 1997, BLA.
- 36 Interview with King Hussein of Jordan, Amman, 2 March 1997, BLA.
- 37 Quotes are from The Report of the Israeli Examining Judge – Yerushalmi.
- 38 Interview with General Reshetnikov Vassily Vassilievich, Commander of Strategic Aviation Corps, Moscow, 27 September 1996 (in the author's archive).
- 39 Chief of IAF Mordechai Hod to author, Tel Aviv, 21 January 1997.
- 40 Interview with Syrian General Abdel Razzak Al-Dardari.
- 41 A. Eban, *My Country*, 279.
- 42 A. M. Farid, *Nasser: The Final Years* (Reading, 1994) 6–7. For eleven years, until 1970, Abdel Magid Farid had served as Secretary-General of the Egyptian presidency with the rank of minister, and attended all of Nasser's meetings on domestic and international affairs.
- 43 *ibid.*, 14.
- 44 *Al-Ahram*, 21 January 1969.
- 45 A. M. Farid, *Nasser: The Final Years*, 135.
- 46 *ibid.*, 135–6.
- 47 Haim Bar Lev to author, Jerusalem, 19 March 1991.
- 48 Ezer Weizman to author, Caesaria, 17 February 1992.
- 49 Former Chief of IAF Mordechai Hod to author, Lod, 8 April 1991.
- 50 'Dayan outlines Israel's military strategy', *Financial Times*, 29 January 1970.

#### 4 WAR AND PEACE 1973–9

- 1 Interview with Joseph Sisco, Washington, 19 March 1997, BLA; also interview with Alfred 'Roy' Atherton, who had accompanied Sisco on this visit, Washington, 19 October 1996, in the author's archive.
- 2 Interview with General Saad el-Din Shazli, Cairo, 24 February 1997; BLA.

- 3 Interview with General Saad el-Din Shazli and with Field Marshal Abdul Ghani el-Gamassy, Cairo, 24 February 1997, BLA.
- 4 On this visit to Moscow, see M. Heikal, *The Road to Ramadan: The Inside Story of how the Arabs Prepared for and almost Won the October War of 1973* (London, 1975) 83–90; also E. Zeira, *The October '73 War: Myth Versus Reality* (Tel Aviv, 1993) 87 (Hebrew).
- 5 A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity*, 318 (my emphasis).
- 6 Interview with Pavel Akopov, Moscow, March 1997, BLA.
- 7 Interview with Field Marshal Abdel Ghani el-Gamassy.
- 8 S. el-Shazli, *The Crossing of Suez: The October War: 1973* 122 (London, 1980).
- 9 The above conservation is mentioned in A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity* (Ita), 241.
- 10 Much of the following information has never been published before and is still one of the most guarded secrets in Israel. It is based on lengthy interviews with people who were close to the events and are very reliable, but whose names, for obvious reasons, cannot be revealed.
- 11 A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity*, 318.
- 12 A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity*, 241.
- 13 Interview with Field Marshal Abdel Ghani el-Gamassy.
- 14 Interview with Egyptian general Fuad Awidi, *Ma'ariv*, 24 September 1993 (Hebrew).
- 15 Interview with Syrian general Abdel Razzak Al-Dardary, who was then chief of operations; see also Interview with Egyptian general Bahieddin Noufal. Noufal was the Chief of Staff of the joint Egyptian–Syrian federal operation.
- 16 Interview with Egyptian general Saad el-Din Shazli.
- 17 Interview with Syrian former minister of information George Saddeqni, Damascus, 16 October 1996, in the author's archive.
- 18 *ibid.*
- 19 Interview with former Jordanian prime minister Zeid Rifai.
- 20 This document was first published in A. Bregman and J. el-Tahri, *The Fifty Years War*, 118–19. By publishing this rare document we have managed to confirm for the first time rumours of the King's visit to Israel.
- 21 Interview with Egyptian general Bahieddin Noufal.
- 22 Interview with Syrian Minister of Defence Mustapha Tlas, Damascus, 3 July 1997, BLA; Interview with General Saad el-Shazli, Cairo, 28 September 1996, in the author's archive; also interview with Field-Marshal Abdel Ghani el-Gamassy; also interview with general Bahieddin Noufal.

- 23 A. el-Sadat, *In Search of Identity*, 246.
- 24 Interview with Egyptian general Saad el-Din Shazli and Interview with Egyptian general Bahieddin Noufal.
- 25 Interview with Syrian Minister of Defence Mustapha Tlas.
- 26 Haim Bar Lev to author.
- 27 Yitzhak Hofi to author, Ramat Gan, 21 October 1996.
- 28 Interview with former Syrian Minister of Information George Saddeqni.
- 29 G. Meir, *My Life*, 358.
- 30 A. Braun, *Moshe Dayan and the Yom Kippur War* (Tel Aviv, 1992) 86 (Hebrew).
- 31 S. el-Shazli, *The Crossing of Suez*, 150.
- 32 Interview with Field Marshal Abdel Ghani el-Gamassy.
- 33 S. el-Shazli, *The Crossing of Suez*, 157.
- 34 Yisrael Tal to Uri Milstein, 8 January 1984, Yad Tabenkin Archive (YTA), 25/60/2 (Hebrew).
- 35 Yisrael Tal to Uri Milstein.
- 36 M. Dayan, *Story of My Life*, 488.
- 37 M. Dayan, *Story of My Life*, 494.
- 38 M. Dayan, *Story of My Life*, 503.
- 39 S. el-Shazli, *The Crossing of Suez*, 162.
- 40 M. Heikal, *The Road to Ramadan*, 227.
- 41 Yisrael Tal to author.
- 42 A. Sharon, *Warrior: The Autobiography of Ariel Sharon* (London, 1989) 311; also Ariel Sharon to author.
- 43 M. Dayan, *Story of My Life*, 590.

## 5 WAR IN LEBANON 1982

- 1 Interview with King Hussein of Jordan.
- 2 Shimon Peres to author, Tel Aviv, 9 July 1997.
- 3 A. Naor, *Begin in Power: Personal Testimony* (Tel Aviv, 1993) 253 (Hebrew).
- 4 A. Sharon, 'Facts as they are about the war in Lebanon', lecture at the Centre for Strategic Studies (Tel Aviv, 11 August 1987) 4 (Hebrew).
- 5 Former Mossad agent David Kimche to author, Ramat Ha'sharon, 3 October 1996, in the author's archive.
- 6 Z. Schiff, *Ha'aretz*, 23 May 1982 (Hebrew).
- 7 Y. Marcus, 'The war is inevitable', *Ha'aretz*, 23 May 1982 (Hebrew).
- 8 A. Sharon, 'Facts as they are about the war in Lebanon', 10 (Hebrew).

- 9 Interview with Morris Draper, Washington, 13 October 1996, in the author's archive.
- 10 Ariel Sharon to author, Havat Ha'shikmim, 1 March 1997; interview with Alexander Haig, Washington, 18 March 1997, BLA.
- 11 The above quotations are from: G. Ball and D. Ball, *The Passionate Attachment: America's Involvement with Israel, 1947 to present* (New York, 1992) 123.
- 12 As cited in H. Sachar, *A History of Israel*, vol. II (Oxford, 1987) 175.
- 13 Y. Shamir, *Summing Up* (New York, 1994) 132; Yitzhak Shamir to author.
- 14 Chief of Staff Rafael Eitan to author, Jerusalem, 20 March 1991.
- 15 A. Sharon, 'Facts as they are about the war in Lebanon', 14, 20 (Hebrew); former Chief of Staff Rafael Eitan to author.
- 16 Former Director of Military Intelligence Yehoshua Saguy to author, Bat Yam, 7 March 1991.
- 17 Ariel Sharon to author; Bashir Gemayel's adviser, Beirut, 21 Feb 1997, BLA.
- 18 Ariel Sharon in *Yediot Aharonot*, 28 June 1982, 5 (Hebrew); also A. Sharon, 'Facts as they are about the war in Lebanon', 19 (Hebrew).
- 19 The above quotations are based on the interview with Karim Pakradouni.
- 20 Avigdor Ben Gal to author, Tel Aviv, 16 January 1992; also Director of Military Intelligence Yehoshua Saguy to author.
- 21 Interview with OC Northern Command Amir Drori, *Ma'ariv*, 1 July 1994 (Hebrew) (my emphasis).
- 22 Minutes of a cabinet meeting, 6 June 1982, as quoted by Sharon in his speech in the Knesset, *Divrai Ha'Knesset*, 29 June 1982, 2936 (Hebrew).
- 23 Ariel Sharon to author, 7 April 1991, Jerusalem.
- 24 E. Geva, in *Ma'ariv*, 26 September 1982 (Hebrew).
- 25 Interview with Lebanese Chief of Intelligence Jonny Abdo, Beirut, 1 April 1997, BLA.
- 26 Interview with former prime minister Shafiq al-Wazzan, Beirut, 19 February 1997, BLA.
- 27 Ariel Sharon to author.
- 28 M. Zipori, *In a Straight Line* (Tel Aviv, 1997) 305 (Hebrew).

## 6 INTIFADA 1987–93

- 1 Eitan Haber to author, Ramat Gan, 20 January 1997. Haber was Defence Minister Rabin's assistant; also former general Amram Mitzna to author, Haifa, 27 January 1997. General Mitzna was the overall commander of Judea and Samaria (the West Bank) at the time of the *Intifada*.
- 2 As cited in D. Peretz, *Intifada: The Palestinian Uprising* (Boulder CO, 1992) 35.
- 3 Z. Schiff and E. Ya'ari, *Intifada: Israel's Third Front* (New York, 1989) 79.
- 4 Ehud Barak to author, Kochev Yair.
- 5 Z. Lockmann (ed.) *Intifada* (Boston, 1989) Communiqué no. 1, 328–9.
- 6 W. Laqueur and B. Rubin (eds) 'Hamas: Charter, August 1988', in *The Israel-Arab Reader*, 529–37.
- 7 General Amram Mitzna to author.
- 8 Z. Schiff and E. Ya'ari, *Intifada*, 150.
- 9 Z. Schiff and E. Ya'ari, *Intifada*, 40–1.
- 10 As cited in G. Frankel, *Beyond the Promised Land: Jews and Arabs on the Hard Road to a New Israel* (New York, 1996) 22.

## 7 THE AL-AQSA INTIFADA 2000–

- 1 This was indeed the conclusion of the Sharm el-Sheikh Fact Finding Commission led by Senator George Mitchell, namely that 'The Sharon visit did not cause the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*'. But the Senator also added that the visit 'was poorly timed . . .' *The Mitchell Report*, in the author's archive.
- 2 Aluf Benn and Yossi Verter, 'Summit Fails; PM says "Dream of Peace Still Lives"', *Ha'aretz*, 24 July 2000, (Hebrew).
- 3 'Cyber War Hackers Try Hand at Systems Crash', *Star.arabia.com*, 2 November 2000.
- 4 Avraham Dar to author, Atlit, 26 January 1997.
- 5 'Extra-judicial executions during the *Al-Aqsa Intifada*', *The Palestinian Society for the Protection of Human Rights and the Environment*, 25 March, 2001. All other testimonies of assassinations appearing in this chapter are taken from this source.
- 6 *Ibid.*
- 7 *The Mitchell Report*.
- 8 Text of the Tenet Cease-Fire Plan, in the author's archive.

- 9 Results of the poll as published in *Yediot Aharonot*, 30 March 2001 (Hebrew).

## 8 CONCLUSIONS

- 1 S. Hareven, 'The first forty years', *The Jerusalem Quarterly*, no. 48, (Jerusalem, autumn 1988) 8.
- 2 A. Eban, *My Country*, 287 (my emphasis).
- 3 Recorded and edited by a group of young Kibbutz members: *The Seventh Day: Soldiers Talk about the Six Day War* (London, 1971) 217–18.



## SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY

For reasons of space, this list is very selective and concentrates on works in English and books as these are more accessible.

- Mahmoud Abbas, *Through Secret Channels* (Reading, 1995).
- Avraham Adan, *On the Bank of the Suez: An Israeli General's Personal Account of the Yom Kippur War* (London, 1980).
- Musa Alami, *Palestine is My Country*, (London, 1969).
- Yigal Allon, *Shield of David: The Story of Israel's Armed Forces* (London, 1970).
- Moshe Arens, *Broken Covenant* (New York, 1995).
- Asher Arian, et al., *National Security and Public Opinion in Israel* (Boulder, 1988).
- *The Second Republic: Politics in Israel* (Chatham, 1998).
- Hanan Ashrawi, *This Side of Peace* (New York, 1995).
- Ehud Avriel, *Open the Gates* (New York, 1975).
- James A. Baker, *The Politics of Diplomacy: Revolution, War & Peace 1989–1992* (New York, 1995).
- Frank Barnaby, *The Invisible Bomb: The Nuclear Arms Race in the Middle East* (London, 1989).
- Mordechai Bar On, *The Gates of Gaza: Israel's Road to Suez and Back, 1955–1957* (London, 1994).

- Yaacov Bar Siman Tov, *The Israeli-Egyptian War of Attrition, 1969–1970* (New York, 1980).
- Michael Bar Zohar, *Ben Gurion: A Biography* (London, 1977).
- Morris Beckman, *The Jewish Brigade: An Army with Two Masters 1944–45* (London, 1998).
- Menachem Begin, *The Revolt* (London, 1951).
- David Ben Gurion, *Israel: Years of Challenge* (New York, 1963).
- *Israel: A Personal History* (New York, 1971).
- *Rebirth and Destiny of Israel* (New York, 1954).
- Uri Bialer, *Between East and West: Israel's Foreign Policy Orientation 1948–1956* (Cambridge, 1990).
- Ian Black & Benny Morris, *Israel's Secret Wars: A History of Israel's Intelligence Services* (London, 1996).
- Michael Breecher, *Decisions in Israel's Foreign Policy* (London, 1974).
- Ahron Bregman, *Israel's Wars, 1947–93* (Routledge, 2000).
- Ahron Bregman & Jihan el-Tahri, *The Fifty Years War: Israel and the Arabs* (London, 1998).
- *Israel and the Arabs: An Eyewitness Account of War and Peace in the Middle East* (New York, 2000).
- Zbigniew Brzezinski, *Power and Principle* (New York, 1983).
- Odd Bull, *War and Peace in the Middle East* (London, 1976).
- John Bulloch & Harvey Morris, *Saddam's War* (London, 1991).
- Jimmi Carter, *Keeping Faith* (New York, 1982).
- Randolph Churchill, *The Six Day War* (London, 1967).
- Helena Cobban, *The Palestinian Liberation Organization* (Cambridge, 1984).
- Larry Collins & Dominique Lapierre, *O Jerusalem* (Bnei Brak, 1993).
- Moshe Dayan, *Diary of the Sinai Campaign* (London, 1991).
- *Story of My Life* (London, 1976).
- *Breakthrough: A Personal Account of the Egypt-Israel Peace Negotiations* (New York, 1981).
- Yael Dayan, *Israel Journal: June 1967* (New York, 1967).
- Abba Eban, *An Autobiography* (London, 1977).
- *Personal Witness* (New York, 1992).
- *My Country: The Story of Modern Israel* (London, 1973).
- Dennis Eisenberg et al., *The Mossad, Israel's Secret Intelligence Service: Inside Stories* (New York, 1978).
- Amos Elon, *The Israelis: Founders and Sons* (New York, 1983).
- *A Blood-Dimmed Tide* (London, 2000).
- Anita Engle, *The Nili Spies* (London, 1959).

- Walter Eytan, *The First Ten Years: A Diplomatic History of Israel* (New York, 1958).
- Ismail Fahmi, *Negotiating for Peace in the Middle East* (London, 1983).
- Abdel Magid Farid, *Nasser: The Final Years* (Reading, 1994).
- Norman Finkelstein, *Image and Reality of the Israel-Palestine Conflict* (London, 1995).
- Robert Fisk, *Pity the Nation: Lebanon at War* (Oxford, 1990).
- Ziva Flamhaft, *Israel on the Road to Peace: Accepting the Unacceptable* (Boulder, 1996).
- Simcha Flapan, *The Birth of Israel: Myths and Realities* (New York, 1987).
- Glenn Frankel, *Beyond the Promised Land: Jews and Arabs on the Hard Road to a New Israel* (New York, 1996).
- Robert Freedman (ed.) *Israel in the Begin Era* (New York, 1982).
- Thomas Friedman, *From Beirut to Jerusalem* (London, 1993).
- Richard Gabriel, *Operation Peace for Galilee: The Israeli-PLO War in Lebanon* (New York, 1984).
- Allan Gerson, *Israel, the West Bank and International Law* (London, 1978).
- Martin Gilbert, *The Arab-Israeli Conflict: Its History in Maps* (London, 1974).
- Galia Golan, *Yom Kippur and After* (Cambridge, 1977).
- Matti Golan, *Shimon Peres: A Biography* (London, 1982).
- *The Secret Conversations of Henry Kissinger* (New York, 1976).
- Nahum Goldmann, *The Autobiography of Nahum Goldmann: Sixty Years of Jewish Life* (New York, 1969).
- Calvin Goldscheider, *Israel's Changing Society: Population, Ethnicity, and Development* (Boulder, 1996).
- Yosef Gorny, *Zionism and the Arabs, 1882–1948: A Study of Ideology* (Oxford, 1987).
- David Grossman, *The Yellow Wind* (New York, 1988).
- Yehoshafat Harkabi, *Fedayeen Actions and Arab Strategy* (London, 1969).
- Alan Hart, *Arafat: Terrorist or Peacemaker?* (London, 1984).
- Amira Hass, *Drinking the Sea at Gaza* (London, 1999).
- Yoram Hazony, *The Jewish State: The Struggle for Israel's Soul* (New York, 2000).
- Mohamed Heikal, *The Road to Ramadan: The Inside Story of How the Arabs Prepared for and Almost Won the October War of 1973* (London, 1975).
- *Secret Channels* (London, 1996).
- Arthur Hertzberg, *The Zionist Idea* (New York, 1977).
- Chaim Herzog, *The War of Atonement: The Inside Story of the Yom Kippur War, 1973* (London, 1998).

- Dilip Hiro, *Sharing the Promised Land: An Interwoven Tale of Israelis and Palestinians* (London, 1996).
- David Hirst & Irene Beeson, *Sadat* (London, 1981).
- David Hirst, *The Gun and the Olive Branch* (London, 1977).
- Dan Horowitz & Moshe Lissak, *The Origins of the Israeli Polity: Palestine Under the Mandate* (Chicago, 1978).
- Dov Joseph, *The Faithful City: The Siege of Jerusalem, 1948* (New York, 1960).
- Samuel Katz, *Days of Fire* (New York, 1968).
- Elie Kedourie, *Britain in the Middle East 1914–1921* (London, 1956).
- Jon & David Kimche, *Both Sides of the Hill* (London, 1960).
- Arthur Koestler, *Promise and Fulfilment: Palestine 1917–1949* (London, 1983).
- Teddy Kollek, *For Jerusalem* (London, 1978).
- Dan Kurzman, *Genesis 1948: The First Arab-Israeli War* (New York, 1970).
- Walter Laqueur & Barry Rubin, *The Israel-Arab Reader: A Documentary History of the Middle East Conflict* (London, 1995).
- Walter Laqueur, *A History of Zionism* (London, 1972).
- Bernard Lewis, *Semites and Anti-Semites* (London, 1986).
- Barnet Litvinoff, *The Story of David Ben Gurion* (New York, 1959).
- *Weizmann* (London, 1976).
- Nethanel Lorch, *The Edge of the Sword: Israel's War of Independence, 1947–1949* (New York, 1968).
- Kenett Love, *Suez* (New York, 1969).
- Noah Lucas, *The Modern History of Israel* (New York, 1974).
- Edward Luttwak & Dan Horowitz, *The Israeli Army* (London, 1975).
- John Marlowe, *Rebellion in Palestine* (London, 1946).
- Nur Masalha, *Expulsion of the Palestinians* (Washington, 1992).
- Peter Medding, *The Foundation of Israeli Democracy, 1948–1967* (New York, 1990).
- Golda Meir, *My Life* (London, 1975).
- Elizabeth Monroe, *Britain's Moment in the Middle East, 1914–1956* (London, 1963).
- Benny Morris, *1948 and After: Israel and the Palestinians* (Oxford, 1990).
- *The Birth of the Palestinian Refugee Problem, 1947–1949* (Cambridge, 1988).
- Donald Neff, *Warriors at Suez* (New York, 1981).
- Marcelle Ninio, *Operation Susannah* (New York, 1978).
- Hazem Zaki Nuseibeh, *Palestine and the United Nations* (London, 1981).
- Edgar O'Ballance, *The Arab-Israeli War, 1948* (London, 1956).

- *No Victor, No Vanquished: The Arab-Israeli War*, 1973 (California 1997).
- Ritchie Owendale, *The Origins of the Arab-Israeli Wars* (London, 1984).
- Amos Oz, *In the Land of Israel* (New York, 1983).
- Ilan Pappé, *The Making of the Arab-Israeli Conflict 1947–1951* (London, 1994).
- John B. Glubb, *A Soldier with the Arabs* (London, 1958).
- Raphael Patai (ed.), *The Complete Diaries of Theodor Herzl*, 5 vols. (New York, 1961).
- Shimon Peres, *David's Sling* (London, 1970).
- *Battling for Peace: Memoirs* (London, 1995).
- Don Peretz, *Israel and the Palestine Arabs* (Washington, 1958).
- *Palestinians, Refugees and the Middle East Peace Process* (Washington, 1993).
- Amos Perlmutter et al., *Two Minutes Over Baghdad* (London, 1982).
- Terence Prittie, *Eshkol of Israel: The Man and the Nation* (London, 1969).
- William Quandt, *Camp David: Peacemaking and Politics* (Washington, 1986).
- Yitzhak Rabin, *The Rabin Memoirs* (London, 1979).
- Itamar Rabinovich, *The Road not Taken: Early Arab-Israeli Negotiations* (Oxford, 1991).
- *The War for Lebanon, 1970–1983* (New York, 1984).
- Gideon Rafael, *Destination Peace, Three Decades of Israeli Foreign Policy: A Personal Memoir* (London, 1981).
- Jonathan Randal, *The Tragedy of Lebanon* (London, 1990).
- Simon Reeve, *One Day in September: The Story of the 1972 Munich Olympics Massacre* (London, 2000).
- Jehuda Reinharz and Anita Shapira (ed.), *Essential Papers on Zionism* (London, 1996).
- Mahmoud Riad, *The Struggle for Peace in the Middle East* (New York, 1981).
- Norman Rose, *Chaim Weizmann: A Biography* (New York, 1986).
- Gunther Rothenberg, *The Anatomy of the Israeli Army* (London, 1979).
- Amnon Rubinstein, *The Zionist Dream Revisited* (New York, 1984).
- Harry Sachar, *Israel: The Establishment of a State* (London, 1952).
- Howard Sachar, *A History of Israel* (Oxford, 1987).
- *Aliyah, The Peoples of Israel* (New York, 1961).
- Anwar Sadat, *In Search of Identity: An Autobiography* (New York, 1977).
- Nadav Safran, *Israel, The Embattled Ally* (Cambridge, 1981).
- Edward W. Said, *The Question of Palestine* (New York, 1980).
- *Peace & Its Discontents* (London, 1995).
- Herbert Viscount Samuel, *Memoirs* (London, 1945).

- Zeev Schiff & Ehud Ya'ari, *Israel's Lebanon War* (London, 1984).
- *Intifada, The Palestinian Uprising, Israel's Third Front* (New York, 1989).
- Patrick Seale, *The Struggle for Syria* (Oxford, 1965).
- Tom Segev, *The Seventh Million: The Israelis and the Holocaust* (New York, 1993).
- Yitzhak Shamir, *Summing Up: An Autobiography* (Boston, 1994).
- Ariel Sharon, *Warrior: The Autobiography of Ariel Sharon* (London, 1989).
- Saad el-Shazli, *The Crossing of Suez: The October War (1973)* (London, 1980).
- Gabriel Sheffer, *Moshe Sharett: Biography of a Political Moderate* (Oxford, 1996).
- David Shipler, *Arab and Jew: Wounded Spirits in a Promised Land* (New York, 1987).
- Avi Shlaim, *The Politics of Partition, King Abdullah, the Zionists and Palestine 1921–1951* (Oxford, 1988).
- *The Iron Wall: Israel and the Arab World* (London, 2000).
- Eric Silver, *Begin: The Haunted Prophet* (New York, 1984).
- Robert Slater, *Rabin of Israel: Warrior for Peace* (London, 1996).
- Charles D. Smith, *Palestine and the Arab-Israeli Conflict* (New York, 1992).
- Steven Spiegel, *The Other Arab-Israeli Conflict: Making America's Middle East Policy From Truman to Reagan* (Chicago, 1985).
- Leonard Stein, *The Balfour Declaration* (London, 1961).
- Steward Steven, *The Spymasters of Israel* (London, 1980).
- William Stevenson, *90 Minutes at Entebbe* (New York, 1976).
- Christopher Sykes, *Cross Roads to Israel: Palestine from Balfour to Bevin* (London, 1965).
- *Orde Wingate* (London, 1959).
- Marie Syrkin, *Golda Meir: Woman With a Cause* (New York, 1961).
- Mark Tessler, *A History of the Israeli-Palestinian Conflict* (Bloomington, 1994).
- Shabtai Tevet, *Ben-Gurion and the Holocaust* (New York, 1996).
- *Moshe Dayan* (London, 1972).
- Sadia Touval, *The Peace Brokers* (Princeton, 1982).
- Barbara W. Tuchman, *Bible and Sword: How the British Came to Palestine* (New York, 1956).
- Brian Urquhart, *Ralph Bunch: An American Life* (New York, 1993).
- David Vital, *The Origins of Zionism* (London, 1975).
- Bernard Wasserstein, *Herbert Samuel: A Political Life* (Oxford, 1992).
- Ezer Weizman, *On Eagles' Wings* (London, 1976).
- *The Battle for Peace* (New York, 1981).

Chaim Weizmann, *Trial and Error: The Autobiography of Chaim Weizmann* (New York, 1949)

Harold Wilson, *The Chariot of Israel* (London, 1981).

Ehud Ya'ari & Eitan Haber, *The Year of the Dove* (New York, 1979).

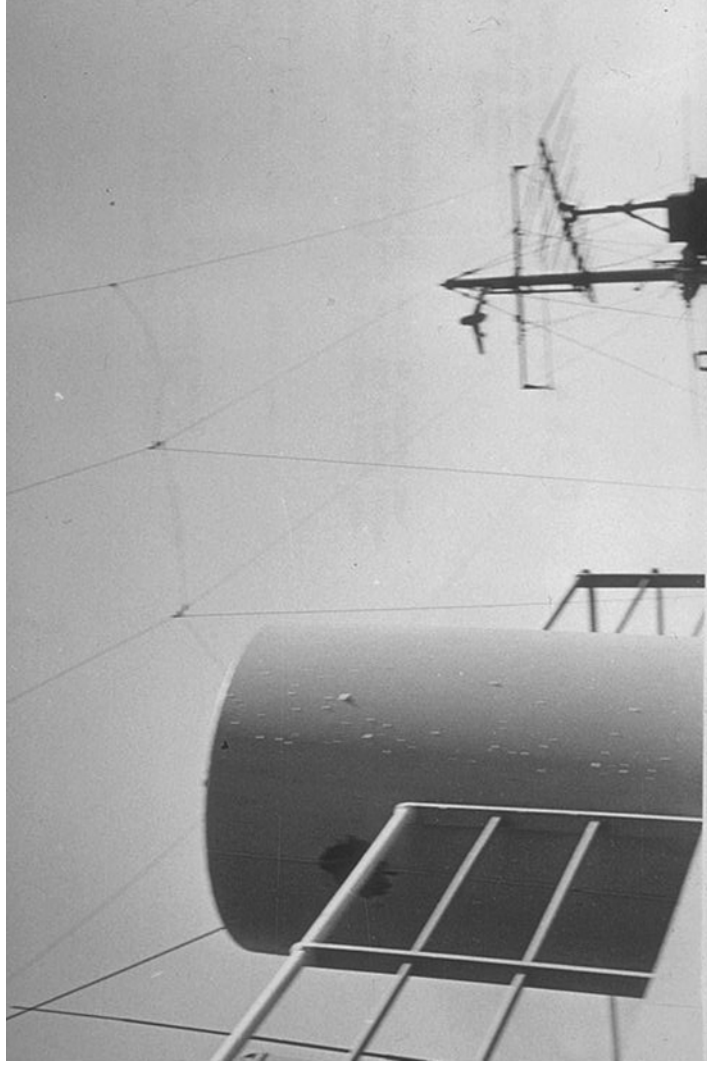
Avner Yaniv, *Deterrence Without the Bomb: The Politics of Israeli Strategy* (Massachusetts, 1987).

Peter Young, *The Israeli Campaign, 1967* (London, 1967).



*Plate 1* Palestinians flee from Palestine during the 1948 War. They became refugees never allowed to return to their homes. © Popperfoto





*Plate 2* Israeli Mystere jet flying overhead during the attack on the USS Liberty, 8 June 1967. Israel bombed this ship although knowing that it was American. Reprinted with permission of the USS Liberty web site.



*Plate 3* Israeli soldiers at the Western Wall, East Jerusalem, June 1967. Capturing this part of Jerusalem was a dream come true but made a solution of the Arab–Israeli war even more complicated.  
© CORBIS



*Plate 4* Golda Meir (right) Prime Minister of Israel from 1969 to 1974, with Defence Minister Moshe Dayan. Her stubbornness combined with his reluctance to fight for his realistic views and led to years of immobilism and eventually to the Yom Kippur war. © CORBIS



*Plate 5* Egyptian troops plant their flag on the Bar-Lev line. Capturing the Israeli line of defence along the Suez Canal during the early stages of the 1973 war restored Egyptian pride and dignity.  
© Popperfoto



*Plate 6* Egyptian President Anwar el-Sadat (left), American President Jimmy Carter (centre) and Israeli Prime Minister Menachem Begin (right) shake hands at the signing of the Camp David Accords on 26 March 1979. It ended more than 30 years of conflict between Egypt and Israel but Sadat paid the price for peace when he was assassinated on 6 October 1981 by Egyptian Muslim extremists.  
© CORBIS



*Plate 7* Defence Minister Ariel Sharon (centre) pointing at a map with General Amos Yaron (right), commander of the Beirut area during the 1982 Lebanon war. Sharon was the architect of Israel's disastrous invasion of Lebanon which led to thousands of casualties and eventually cost Sharon his own post. © CORBIS



*Plate 8* Palestinians at a burning barricade prepare to fire stones towards Israeli soldiers stationed in several jeeps during a violent clash on the outskirts of the West Bank town of Ramallah, 2000. The Palestinians paid a heavy price during the Intifada but managed to force the Israelis to make some concessions. © Popperfoto/Reuters

## INDEX

*For a name or title starting with Al, El or The, see its second part*

- Abayat, Hussein 220–1  
Abdo, Jonny 162–3  
Abdullah Ibn Hussein, King (of Jordan) 22, 26–7, 32  
Abu Jihad: assassination of 159, 220  
Abu Joseph, Khalil 149  
Abu Nidal 158–9  
Adam, Yekutiel 171  
Agranat Commission: and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 113, 143  
Akopov, Pavel 119  
Al-Ahram (newspaper) 73, 121  
*Al-Aqsa Intifada* xii, xiii, xiv, 204, 214–17, 220, 231–2, 235–7  
Albright, Madeleine 211  
Algeria: and the Six Day War (1967) 74, 87; and the October War (1973) 124  
Allon, Yigal: and Israel's War of Independence (1948) 30–1; and the Six Day War 80  
AMAN (Israel's Military Intelligence): and the October War (1973) 113, 116, 122, 128  
Amer, Abd Hakim el-: and the Six Day War (1967) 67, 84–5, 87  
Amir, Amos 172  
Amit, Meir: interview with author xvii; and the coming of war in 1967 68, 83–4  
Angleton, James 83  
Annan, Kofi 213  
Arab League 15, 22, 28–9  
Arab Liberation Army (ALA) 15, 18, 24, 32  
Arafat, Yasser: and Israel's invasion of Lebanon (1982) 146, 155,



- 158–9, 163, 173, 175; and the Oslo Agreement xii; and the *Intifada* 186–9, 220; and the Camp David summit (2000) 205, 207–9 *passim*; and *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 210, 213–16 *passim*, 218–19 *passim*, 224, 227–8 *passim*, 232–3 *passim*, 236
- Argov, Shlomo: attempted assassination of 158, 180
- Arif, Abdul Salam 61
- Assad, Hafez el- (President of Syria): and the October War (1973) 112, 117–19, 121, 130; and Israel's invasion of Lebanon (1982) 148
- Aswan Dam 55–6
- Auschwitz 78
- Avriel, Ehud: and purchasing arms 25
- Awidi, Fuad 116
- Ba'ath Party (Syria) 118
- Badran, Shams Din el-: and the Six Day War (1967) 82, 84, 87
- Baghdad Pact (1955) 53, 56
- Balfour Declaration (1917) 6, 8, 12
- Banyas river 64
- Bar Lev, Haim: interview with the author xvii
- Bar Lev line 97–100 *passim*, 126, 133–4, 139, 142
- Bar On, Mordechai: interview with the author xvii; Egypt's arms deal with Czechoslovakia 54–5 *passim*
- Bar Siman Tov, Ya'akov: assassination of 157
- Barak, Ehud: interview with the author xvii; and raid in Beirut (1973) 147, 220; and the Lebanon War (1982) 164; and the *Intifada* 187; as Prime Minister 205, 207, 209–10, 213–15 *passim*, 219, 224–5
- Beersheva 31
- Begin, Menachem: and the Irgun 28–9; becomes Prime Minister (1977) 143; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150–1; and peace with Egypt 102; and the road to the Lebanon War (1982) 153–4 *passim*, 157–9 *passim*; and the Lebanon War (1982) 152, 177
- Beka'a (valley in Lebanon) 148, 153–4, 163–4 *passim*, 168, 169–70 *passim*, 172
- Ben Gal, Avigdor: interview with the author xvii; and the Lebanon War (1982) 164, 168, 171
- Ben Gurion, David: 42, 104; reaches Palestine 5; and *White Paper* (1939) 39; and the struggle for Palestine (November 1947 to May 1948) 11, 15–19 *passim*; and his declaring statehood 21–2; and Israel's War of Independence (1948) 24, 37; and Arab refugees 20, 30–1, 81; and building the IDF 28–9, 43–4; on Egypt's arms deal with Czechoslovakia 52, 54; and predicting a second round with Arabs 41–2; and the Straits of Tiran 57; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 58; and succeeded by Levi Eshkol 65; and the Six Day War (1967) 78–9 *passim*; and *Yeshivot* 45
- Bernadotte, Count Folke 29, 220
- 'Black September' (Jordan 1970) 118

- 'Blue-White' (Israeli false mobilization 1973) 115–16
- Boumedienne, Houari (President of Algeria): and the Six Day War (1967) 87
- Brezhnev, Leonid 109–10, 114
- Britain: 16, 36, 87; and occupying Palestine 2; and Jewish 'national home' 6, 8; and Mandate of Palestine 1, 8, 9–12 *passim*, 14, 17–18, 21–2, 28, 33, 39–40, 65, 193; and the Baghdad Pact (1950) 53; and the Suez war (1956) 55–8 *passim*, 60, 239
- Burg, Yosef: interview with the author xvii; and the Lebanon War (1982) 172
- Bush, W. George 228, 232
- Camp David accords (1978) 149, 153
- Camp David II (2000) 205, 207–9, 225
- Chamoun, Camille: and Israel's invasion of Lebanon (1982) 147–8, 154, 162
- Chuvyakin, Leonid: and the Six Day War (1967) 68
- CIA: and the Six Day War (1967) 69, 83; and the road to the October War (1973) 125; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 213, 228
- Clinton, Bill 205, 207–9, 213–14, 226, 228
- Cold War 66, 69
- 'Conception' xvi, 114, 117
- Creech-Jones, Arthur 14, 18
- Cunningham, Alan Sir 11, 21
- Cyprus 40
- Czechoslovakia: Jewish immigration from 41; arms deal with Egypt (1955) 57
- Damascus (Syria): and the Six Day War (1967) 65–6, 68, 78, 91; and the October War (1973) 135, 138, 141; and the Lebanon War (1982) 148, 154, 161, 163–4, 170, 173; and the *Intifada* 191
- Dardari, Abdel Razzak: and the Six Day War (1967) 91; and the October War (1973) 117, 127
- Dayan, Moshe: and Israel's War of Independence (1948) 30, 32; as chief of staff 54; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 58–9; and relations with Syria before the Six Day War 66; and the Six Day War (1967) 76, 79–81 *passim*, 85–6 *passim*, 90, 142; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 93, 99; and withdrawal from the Suez Canal 105–6; and the coming of war in 1973 105, 120, 129; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 115, 128, 131, 135, 137, 141
- De Gaulle, Charles: and the Six Day War (1967) 98
- Deir Yassin (Arab village) 15, 19–20
- Demilitarized zones (DMZ) 33, 65–7
- Draper, Morris 156
- Drori, Amir 164, 168
- Dulles, John Foster: and the Baghdad Pact 53; and the Dam of Aswan 56
- Durra, Mohammed al- 210
- Eban, Abba: interview with the author xvii; and the Baghdad

- Pact 53; on Israeli society 240; and the Six Day War (1967) 68, 78, 82, 92
- Edwan, Kamal 147, 220
- Egypt(ian): xiv, 2, 49, 54, 64, 213, 218–19; and Jewish immigrants from 240; and Israel's War of Independence (1948) 1, 16–22 *passim*, 24–7 *passim*, 31–3 *passim*, 238; and the 'Free Officers' 51; and the Gaza raid (1955) 50; and the Czech arms deal (1955) 52, 60; and the Suez crisis (1956) 55–8 *passim*; and the Suez War (1956) 59, 104, 178, 238; and defence pact with Syria (1966–7) 65; and links with Jordan (1966–7) 78; and links with Moscow (1967) 82; and the Six Day War (1967) 63, 66–71 *passim*, 73–5 *passim*, 77, 80, 84–7 *passim*, 90–1, 172, 178, 239; and the War of Attrition (1978–80) 93, 96–9 *passim*, 101; and relations with the USSR (1970s) 95, 107–8; and coming of the October War (1973) 105–6, 109, 111–12; and the October War (1973) xvi, 103, 110, 113, 122–5 *passim*, 127–35 *passim*, 137–9 *passim*, 141, 143, 239; and peace with Israel 149, 153, 178, 241
- Ehrlich, Simcha 160
- Eilat: its occupation in 1948 31, 73; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 56–7; and the Six Day War (1967) 70, 72–3
- Einan, Menachem 163
- Eisenhower, Dwight 71
- Eitan, Rafael: interview with the author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 75; and the Lebanon War (1982) 151–4 *passim*
- Elazar, David: and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 115, 120, 131, 135, 139
- Eldad, Yisrael 28
- Eretz Yisrael 2, 40
- Erez Crossing (Gaza Strip) 184–5
- Eshkol, Levi: reaches Palestine 5; and relations with Ben Gurion 78–9 *passim*; and the Six Day War (1967) 65, 68, 79–80, 142; and succeeded by Golda Meir 104
- Farouk, King (of Egypt) 28, 51
- Fawzi, Mohammed: and the Six Day War (1967) 68–9; and a visit with Nasser to Moscow 109; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 95–6
- Feisal, King (of Saudi Arabia) 117–8
- Franjeh, Suleiman 148
- Gadna 45
- Galbraith, John Kenneth 1
- Galilee 15, 17, 19, 74, 89, 128, 152, 159, 216
- Gamassay, Abdel Ghani: and the October War (1973) 111, 116, 132
- Gaza (Strip): 50, 81; and Israel's War of Independence (1948) 19, 32; and Palestinian refugees in 48; and infiltration from 49, 220; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 57–8; and the Six Day War (1967) 70, 76–7, 80, 86, 92; and the *Intifada* 179–84 *passim*, 186–7, 189, 191–3, 195–200 *passim*, 240; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204–5, 210, 213–14, 218–19, 222, 224, 231–3

- Gemayel, Bashir: and the Lebanon War (1982) 147, 154, 162–3, 173, 175–6, 239
- Gemayel, Pierre 162
- Geva, Eli: interview with the author xvii; and the Lebanon War (1982) 163, 177
- Ghaleb, Mourad 28
- Giddi Pass (Sinai): and the Six Day War (1967) 77; and the October War (1973) 103, 126, 138
- Glubb, John Bagot 24, 28, 49–50
- Golan Heights: and the Six Day War (1967) xiii, 74, 89–92 *passim*; and the October War (1973) 112, 125, 127–9, 134–5, 137–8; and the Lebanon War (1982) 156, 178
- Gonen, Shmuel 133
- Goren, Shmuel 78
- Green Island 98
- Gretly, Hassan 121
- Grossman, David 201
- Gur, Mordechai: interview with the author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 75; and the Litani campaign (1978) 151
- Habash, George: expelled from Palestine in 1948 30; and in Jordan 146; and *Intifada* 186, 189
- Habib, Philip: and the Lebanon War (1982) 152, 154, 156
- Hafez, Mustapha 220
- Haganah: and War of Independence (1947–8) 14–15, 19, 25, 28
- Haig, Alexander: and the Lebanon War (1982) 156–7 *passim*
- Hamas: 185, 193, 195, 199–200, 214, 220, 222, 227
- Haram al-Sharif *see* Temple Mount
- Harman, Abraham 62–3
- Hassan, Abdel Kader 111
- Hassan, Hani 163
- Hatzbani river 64
- Hawatmeh, Naif 189
- Haydon, John 82–3
- Heikal, Mohamed Hassanian 73, 138
- Herut (Party) 52
- Herzl, Theodor 3
- Hezbollah 218
- Hod, Mordechai: interview with author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 89, 91
- Hofi, Yitzhak: interview with the author xvii; and the October War (1973) 129
- Holocaust xv, xvi, 38, 40, 45, 54, 61, 78, 91, 241–3
- Hussein, King (of Jordan): and the Six Day War (1967) 74, 86–7; and ‘Black September’ (1970) 146; and meeting Golda Meir 120; and the October War (1973) 118, 129; and peace with Israel xii
- Husseini, Abdall Quader al- 16
- Husseini, Hajj Amin al- 5, 11
- Intifada* (Palestinian uprising) xiv, xv, 179–89 *passim*, 191–3 *passim*, 195–6, 198–200, 215–18 *passim*, 239
- Iran: and the Baghdad Pact (1955) 53; Israel imports oil from 71; and its war with Iraq 159; and the *Intifada* 181
- Iraq: and Israel’s War of Independence 15, 24–7 *passim*, 33; and Jewish immigration from 40;

- and the Baghdad Pact (1955) 53; and the 1967 War 74; and the October War (1973) 124, 127, 137; and its war with Iran 159; and a bombing raid on (1981) 154, 172
- Irgun (Zvai Leumi) 9, 15, 18–19, 28–9
- Islamic Jihad 185, 189, 193, 200, 214, 220, 227
- Ismail, Ahmed 121, 138
- Ismail, Hafez 107–8
- Israel (is): xiv, xv, 12, 18, 42–3, 46–7, 49, 52–3 *passim*, 54–5, 64, 81, 153, 220, 238, 241–3 *passim*; and the 'children of Israel' 8; people of xv, 45, 93, 144, 240; and independence 1, 21–2; and the 1948 War of Independence 1, 23–6 *passim*, 28–9, 30–3, 35–9, 238; and Jewish immigration to 39–41; and propaganda 48, 50, 53, 239; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 56–61 *passim*, 70–1, 239; and the coming of war in 1967 62, 65–7, 72–3; and the Six Day War (1967) 63, 69, 74, 77, 79, 82–92 *passim*, 239; and USS *Liberty* xiii; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 95–101 *passim*, 239; and relations with the US before the Yom Kippur War 107; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 62, 102–6 *passim*, 108–21 *passim*, 123–6 *passim*, 129–35 *passim*, 137–9, 141–2, 239–40; and supporting the Maronites in Lebanon 148–9, 154; and the coming Lebanon War (1982) 166, 169–73 *passim*; and the Lebanon War (1982) xv, 150, 155, 157, 160, 166, 175–8 *passim*, 180; and the *Intifada* 179, 181–93 *passim*, 195–203 *passim*; and purchasing F-16 from the US 181; and the Camp David summit (2000) 207–9; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204–5, 210–19 *passim*, 221–37 *passim*
- Israel Air Force (IAF): and the Six Day War (1967) 84, 87; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 99–100; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 123–5, 128, 131, 133, 135, 138–9, 143; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150–1; and the coming Lebanon War (1982) 147, 152, 154, 156–9 *passim*, 161–5 *passim*; and the Lebanon War (1982) 145–6, 171–5 *passim*
- Israel Defence Forces (IDF): 43–5, 101, 241; established 28–9; its doctrine of warfare 75; its arms 41, 46, 53, 79; its magazine *Bamachane* 47, 65; and figures of Palestinian infiltration and murder of Jews 48–9; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 55, 59–60; and the Six Day War (1967) 76, 80, 84–5, 91; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 98; and the Bar Lev line 97; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 113, 115, 125, 128, 141; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150; and the Lebanon War (1982) 150, 155, 158–60, 165, 174; and the *Intifada* 179, 182, 187–8, 190; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 210, 227, 229–30

- Jaffa 5, 8, 14, 16, 18–19, 216
- Jerusalem: 5, 25, 220; Jewish immigration to 4; riots in (1920) 8; and partition (1947) 10, 12; and Jewish-Palestinian civil war 17; and the War of Independence 14, 16, 18–19, 33, 37; and the Six Day War (1967) 74, 78, 86–7, 92; and Israelis riot in 101; and Anwar Sadat's visit to 143; and Begin meets Lebanese leaders in 154; and Begin's cabinet meets in 159, 169; and *Intifada* in 179, 188–91 *passim*, 202; and Camp David (2000) 207–9 *passim*; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204–5, 210–12, 216, 219, 223, 225, 231, 233
- Jewish Agency 19
- Jewish National Home 5
- Jewish State xvii, 1, 16–18, 21–2, 26, 33, 40, 45, 54
- Jibril, Ahmed 86
- Johnson, Lyndon (President of US) 62, 82
- Jordan (Hashemite Kingdom of): xiv, 64, 218–19; and the 1948 War 1, 15, 24–7, 32–3, 238; and Arab Legion of 27–8, 30, 33, 50; and Israeli retaliatory on 60; and the escalating crisis (1966–7) 63, 65, 67, 72, 74–5, 78; and the June 1967 War 86, 90–1, 239; and expelling Fedayeen from 146–7; and Palestinian Arab refugees in 48, 154, 185; and relations with Egypt before the October War 118–19; and the October War (1973) 127, 135, 137
- Jordan (river): and Israel's War of Independence 22, 27, 32; and the 1956 War 60; and the October War (1973) 128, 134
- Jumblat, Kamal 146
- Kadesh War *see* Sinai campaign
- Kahalani, Avigdor 163, 166
- Kanout, Ghani 27
- KGB 69
- Khalek, Abdel Mohsein 27
- Kibia (Arab village) 50
- Kislev, Shmuel 89
- Kissinger, Henry 107–8
- Knesset: 49, 215, 217, 223, 225; and Law of Return 39; and Chok Sherut Bitachon Leumi 44; and Ben Gurion speech at 45, 52; and debating weapons to Egypt 53; and Golda Meir replies to Sadat's peace offer (1971) 105
- Kollek, Teddy 25
- Kosygin, Alexei 82
- Kuwait: and the Six Day War (1967) 74; and the October War (1973) 124
- Labadi, Mohamad 191
- Labour (political party): 143; and its central committee of 106
- Latrun 74
- Lebanon: xiv, xvi, 11; and the 1948 War 18, 24–7, 32, 238; and armistice talks with (1949) 33; and Palestinian Arab refugees in 48; and stopping infiltration to Israel 64–5; and the Six Day War (1967) 74; and Palestinians flee to 146; and its society 148; and Syria enters to 153; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150–1, 166; and Israel invasion of (1982) xv, 145,

- 147, 152–61 *passim*, 163–5, 168–70, 173–8 *passim*, 202–3, 205, 225, 239–43 *passim*; and Palestinians deported to 200; and *Intifada* 186
- Lehi 9, 15, 19, 28–9
- Liberty* (American ship) xiii, 88–9 *passim*
- Libya: and the October War (1973) 124
- Likud (political party) 102; elected 143; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150, 160–1, 166; and the PLO in Lebanon 155; and the *Intifada* 181; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204
- Lino* (ship) 25
- Litani river: and Israel's War of Independence 32; and the Lebanon War (1982) 165; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150; and Syria in Lebanon 148
- Lydda 16, 30–1
- Macmillan, Gordon 14
- MacNamara, Robert: and the Six Day War (1967) 83
- Maginot line 98
- Mahal (overseas volunteers) 24
- Marshall, George 21
- Meir Golda: reaches Palestine 5; and raises money for arms 25; and her speech at the UN (1957) 71; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 100; and meeting King Hussein 119–20; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 104–7, 122, 130–1; and 'no Palestinian nation' 201
- Meridor, Ya'acov 52
- Mitchell Commission (report) 214, 226–8, 231–2
- Mitla Pass (Sinai): and the Sinai campaign (1956) 59; and the Six Day War (1967) 77; and the October War (1973) 103, 126, 138
- Mofaz, Shaul 223
- Moledet (political party) 233
- Mordechai, Yitzhak 163
- Morocco: and the October War (1973) 124, 127
- Mossad: 220; and the Six Day War (1967) 68, 83–4 *passim*, 87; and its agent in Egypt xvii, 113–16 *passim*, 118, 130–1; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 119–20; and the Lebanon War (1982) 148–50, 157
- Mount Scopus 20
- Moyne, Lord 219
- Mubarak, Hosni 213
- Mugabgab 148–9
- Mustafa, Ali Abu 232–3
- Najar, Yusuf: assassination of 147, 220
- Narkiss, Uzi: interview with the author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 78
- Nasser, Gamal Abdel: and Mossad's agent xvii, 113; and arms deal with Czechoslovakia (1955) 51–4 *passim*; and endorses Protocol of the Elders of Zion 61; and the Suez Canal 105; and the Suez crisis (1956) 55–8 *passim*; and threatens Israel 60–1, 77; and the escalating crisis (1966–7) 68, 72, 74, 76, 82–3, 104; and the 1967 War 63, 65, 70,

- 73, 80–1, 85, 87, 109; and arms from the USSR after the 1967 War 110, 114; and relations with the Soviet Union 94–5, 109; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 93, 96, 98, 239; and succeeded by Anwar Sadat 102–3
- Nasser, Kamal: assassination of 147, 220
- Nazi(sm) 4, 9, 35, 40, 61, 188, 194–5
- Negev (desert): 72–3; and Israel's War of Independence 17, 31; and development of 57, 64, 71
- Nixon, Richard 106–7
- Noufal, Bahey Edin 121
- Occupied territories 182, 186, 188, 193, 199–200, 202–3, 205, 209–13, 215–18, 225–6, 231, 235, 243
- Or, Theodor 217
- Oren, Moshe 89
- Orient House 231
- Oslo Agreement 200, 203, 239
- Ottoman (empire) 4
- Palestine: 2, 10–7 *passim*, 22, 28, 40, 65, 78, 86, 193, 238; and Jews arrive at 4, 21; and the struggle for xiv, 1, 3, 5–6, 8–9; and partition of 11–12, 14, 32, 92; and Israel's War of Independence 1, 15–16, 18–20, 23, 26, 35
- Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO): xiv, 148, 220; established in Lebanon 146; and the Litani campaign (1978) 150–1; and the coming of war (1982) 148, 152–6, 158–63 *passim*; and the Lebanon War (1982) 149, 166, 169, 171, 173–5, 239; and the *Intifada* 181, 186, 189, 191, 193, 195, 202
- Palestinian(s) 180; as refugees 1, 20, 33, 76, 80, 175; and the struggle for Palestine 5, 6, 12, 16–17, 19, 22, 26–7, 33, 51; and infiltration to Israel 48–50, 64, 150, 220; expelled from Jordan to Lebanon (1970) 146; and the Lebanon war (1982) 164, 166, 173; and killed by Maronites 239; and the *Intifada* xv, xvii, 179, 181–6 *passim*, 187–92 *passim*, 194–201, 203, 240, 243; and the Camp David summit (2000) 207–9; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204–5, 210–19 *passim*, 221–37 *passim*, 243
- Palestinian Authority (PA): and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 210, 216, 218, 226–32, 234
- Palmach 15
- Pasha, Nokrashy 29
- Peel, Lord: and partition of Palestine 9, 12, 92
- Peres, Shimon: interview with the author xvii; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 58; and assisting the Maronites in Lebanon 149; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 218–19, 232–3
- Plan Dalet 17
- Poland: Jewish immigration from 41
- Pyrlin, Evgeny 69
- Rabin, Yitzhak: interview with the author xvii; and expelling Palestinians during Israel's War of Independence 30–1; and



- transfer Palestinians during the Sinai campaign 60; and the Six Day War (1967) 64–5, 76; and Syrians enter Lebanon 148, 153; and assisting Maronites in Lebanon 148–9; and the *Intifada* 181, 197, 202; and Oslo Agreement xii
- Rahnim, Mohammed 162
- Razek, Jamal Abed al- 221
- Reagan, Ronald: and crisis in Lebanon 152, 156
- Rhodes 32
- Rifai, Zeid 119
- Romania: Jewish immigration from 41
- Rostow, Walt: and the coming of war in 1967 62
- Rothschild, Lord 6
- Ruppin, Arthur 5
- Rusk, Dean: and the coming of war in 1967 83
- Sabit, Adel 28
- Sabra and Shatilla (Lebanon) 175, 177, 205, 239
- Sabri, Ali 103
- Sadat, Anwar el-: and the Six Day War (1967) 67, 72; and Mossad's agent xvi, 113–14, 118, 130; and the road to the October War 102–4, 106–12 *passim*, 114–19 *passim*, 122, 129, 131; and the October War (1973) 138, 239; and peace initiative 105, 143
- Saddeqni, George: and the October War (1973) 118, 121, 130
- Safed 4, 19
- Salemeh, Hassan 16
- Saudi Arabia: and Israel's War of Independence 24, 26; and the 1967 War 67; and the road to the October War (1973) 117–18; and Lebanese affairs 152
- Sekle, Shlomo 180
- Semnov, Vladimir 67
- Sevres 58
- Shamir, Yitzhak: interview with the author xvii; leads the Lehi 28; and Lebanon 155, 160; and the *Intifada* 181
- Sharett, Moshe: as Prime Minister 51–2, 54
- Sharm el-Sheikh *see* Tiran Straits
- Sharon, Ariel: interview with the author xvii; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 59; and the Six Day War (1967) 75, 77; and the Bar Lev line 98, 126; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 133, 139, 141; and the Lebanon War (1982) 151–7 *passim*, 160–4 *passim*, 166, 168–77 *passim*; and the *Intifada* 190; and the *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204–5, 209–10, 215–16, 225–8, 233–4
- Shazli, Saad el-: and the Six Day War (1967) 73–4; and the October War (1973) 108, 125, 132, 137–9
- Shehadeh, Salah 193
- Shin Bet 186, 213
- Sinai campaign (1956) 47, 55, 60
- Sinai (desert) 1; and the Sinai campaign (1956) 58–9; and the Six Day War (1967) 67–8, 70, 73–5, 77, 80, 84, 86, 88, 92; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 96–8; and the October War

- (1973) 103–4, 109–11, 123, 125, 129, 132–3, 135, 137–8; and its return to Egypt 143, 153
- Sisco, Joseph 106–7
- Six Day War xv, 45, 131, 142, 179, 188–9, 201, 204, 241–2
- Solana, Javier 213
- Soviet(s) Union 11, 53, 66–7; and partition of Palestine 18; and false report before the 1967 Six Day War 66, 68–9, 72, 82–3; and the Six Day War 87, 90; and its relations with Egypt 56, 82, 93, 95, 103, 107–8, 111, 122; and the October War (1973) 141; and its relations with the US 108
- Stern Gang *see* Lehi
- Sudan: and the October War (1973) 124
- Suez Canal: and the Suez war (1956) 56–7, 59; and the Six Day War (1967) 67, 76–7, 81, 85–6; and the War of Attrition (1968–70) 93, 95, 97, 99–101, 104, 142, 239; and the October War (1973) 102–3, 105–6, 122, 124–6, 132, 137–9, 141
- Syria: xiv, 46, 64; and the 1948 War 1, 15, 24–7 *passim*, 32–3, 238; and firing at Israelis 51; and the escalating crisis (1966–7) 63, 66–70 *passim*, 72, 74–5, 78, 82; and the Six Day War (1967) 65, 68, 90–1, 178, 239; and arms from the USSR 95; and the road to the October War (1973) 112, 117–22 *passim*, 125, 129; and the October War (1973) 127–8, 130–3 *passim*, 135, 137–8, 141, 239–40; and entering Lebanon 148, 153, 155; and Israel's Litani campaign (1978) 150–1; and the road to the Lebanon War (1982) 147, 154, 156, 159, 162–5 *passim*, 168–73 *passim*; and the Lebanon War (1982) 166, 174, 239; and the *Intifada* 181
- Tal, Yisrael: interview with the author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 75, 77; and the Bar Lev line 98; and the Yom Kippur War (1973) 128, 134, 139
- Tanzim 213–14, 216
- Tawfik (attacked by Israel) 68
- Temple Mount 204–5, 207–10 *passim*, 212, 225
- Tenet, George (Plan) 228, 231–2
- Tharir 41, 121
- Tiran Straits: and the Sinai campaign (1956) 56, 58–60 *passim*, 104; and the road to war in 1967 70–1, 73, 76–7, 80, 83; and the October War (1973) 132
- Tlas, Mustapha: and the October War (1973) 121, 125
- Truman, Harry S.: recognizes Israel 22
- Tunisia: and the October War (1973) 124
- Turkey: and the Baghdad Pact (1955) 53
- U Thant: and the 1967 crisis 70
- United Nations (UN) 158, 194, 214, 220; and Partition of Palestine (1947) 10–12, 14–18, 21–2, 26–7, 30, 33, 238; and Israel's War of Independence 29, 31–2, 35; and Israel's withdrawal from Sharm

- el-Sheikh (1957) 71; and the coming of war in 1967 70, 91; and the Six Day War (1967) 86; and resolution 42–5 151
- United Nations Interim Force in Lebanon (UNIFIL) 151
- United Nations Special Committee on Palestine (UNSCOP) 10–11
- United States (USA) and Israel (1947–9) 11, 18, 22; and the Baghdad Pact (1955) 53; and Egypt's relations with 104, 107–8; and Israel's relations with 82, 106, 181; and its relations with the USSR 66–7, 69, 108; and the Camp David summit (2000) 207; and *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 210, 228–9, 232, 234
- UNLU 189–92 *passim*, 198
- Urquhart, Brian 158
- USSR *see* Soviet Union
- Vinogradov, Vladimir 122
- War of Attrition 93, 96, 98–101, 142, 239
- Wazzan, Shafiq al- 175
- Weizman, Ezer: interview with the author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 76; and the Litani campaign (1978) 151; and resigns as defence minister 152
- Weizmann, Chaim 3
- West Bank (of Jordan): and Israel's War of Independence (1948) 22, 27, 32–3, 238; and the Six Day War (1967) 74, 87, 92; and King Hussein's attempt to unite with Jordan 118; and Lebanon War (1982) 155, 178; and *Intifada* 179, 182, 185, 187, 189, 191–3, 195–6, 240; and the Camp David summit (2000) 207; and *Al-Aqsa Intifada* 204–5, 212, 214, 219, 226, 231
- White Paper (1939) 9
- Wilson, Harold: and the Six Day War (1967) 83
- Yadin, Yigael: calling on parents to 'buy an iron cloth' 53; as chief of staff 41–4, 47
- Yariv, Aharon: interview with the author xvii; and the Six Day War (1967) 81
- Yaron, Amos: and the Lebanon War (1982) 163
- Yassin, Sheikh Ahmad: and the *Intifada* 193, 199
- Yelin Mor, Nathan 28
- Yemen: civil war in 63
- Yesh Gvul* 177, 202–3
- Yishuv 15
- Yoffe, Abraham: and the Six Day War (1967) 75, 77
- Yom Kippur War xvi, 103, 105, 112, 114, 116, 126, 142–3, 150, 168, 179, 239
- Yugoslavia: Jewish immigration from 41
- Zamir, Zvika: meets Mossad's agent in London 130–1
- Ze'evi, Rehavam 233–4
- Zeira, Eli: interview with the author xvii; and the road to the Yom Kippur War (1973) 115
- Zionism 3
- Zionist movement 4, 5, 11, 194
- Zwargwill, Yisrael 3